

# ***POLICY DOCUMENT: MEMBERS WHO REENTER THE FRANCHISE SYSTEM***

*This animal ate the “benefits” bait. The cage is a “franchise” contract/agreement. He has a mask and a striped tail because he is a thief and the stripes are prison stripes. All thieves should end up in jail. The franchise itself is the jail.*



*‘For among My [God’s] people are found wicked [covetous public servant] men; They lie in wait as one who sets snares; They set a trap; They catch men. As a cage is full of birds, So their houses are full of deceit. Therefore they have become great and grown rich. They have grown fat, they are sleek; Yes, they surpass the deeds of the wicked; They do not plead the cause, The cause of the fatherless [or the innocent, widows, or the nontaxpayer]; Yet they prosper, And the right of the needy they do not defend. Shall I not punish them for these things?’ says the Lord. ‘Shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?’*

*“An astonishing and horrible thing Has been committed in the land: The prophets prophesy falsely, And the priests [judges in franchise courts that worship government as a pagan deity] rule by their own power; And My people love to have it so. But what will you do in the end?”*

*[Jer. 5:26-31, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive her plagues. For her [our corrupted de facto WHORE government] sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities.”*

*[Rev. 18:1-8, Bible, NKJV]*

## DEDICATION

*"Most people do not want true liberty. They want kinder masters and a more comfortable cage."  
[SEDM]*

*"Liberty means responsibility. That's why most men dread it."  
[George Bernard Shaw]*

*"Either be totally free or be the most expensive slave in the history of the world."  
[SEDM]*

*"A person dependent on somebody else for everything from potatoes to opinions may declare that he is a free [SOVEREIGN] man, and his government may issue a certificate granting him his freedom, but he will not be free. ... How can he be free if he can do nothing for himself? ... Men are free precisely to the extent that they are equal to their own needs. The most able [and the most contented with the lowest needs per 1 Tim. 6:6] are the most free."*

*[Wendell Berry, "Discipline and Hope" in A Continuous Harmony (1972), p. 124]*

*"The hand of the diligent will rule [be SOVEREIGN], but the lazy [or irresponsible or GOVERNMENT DEPENDENT] man will be put to forced labor. "  
[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]*

***"Come out from among them [the unbelievers and [government idolaters\]](#)***

***And be separate, says the Lord.***

***Do not touch what is unclean,***

*And I will receive you.*

*I will be a Father to you,*

*And you shall be my sons and daughters,*

*Says the Lord Almighty."*

*[[2 Corinthians 6:17-18](#), Bible, NKJV]*

---

*"People of all races, genders, political beliefs, sexual orientations, and nearly all religions are welcome here. All are treated equally under [REAL "law"](#). The only way to remain truly free and equal under the civil law is to avoid seeking government civil services, benefits, property, [special or civil status](#), exemptions, privileges, or special treatment. All such pursuits of government services or property require [individual and lawful consent](#) to [a franchise](#) and the surrender of [inalienable constitutional rights](#) AND [EQUALITY](#) in the process, and should therefore be AVOIDED. The rights and equality given up are the "cost" of procuring the "benefit" or property from the government, in fact. Nothing in life is truly "free". Anyone who claims that such "benefits" or property should be free and cost them nothing is a thief who wants to use the government as a means to STEAL on his or her behalf. All [just rights](#) spring from responsibilities/obligations under the [laws of a higher power](#). If that higher power is God, you can be [truly and objectively free](#). If it is government, you are [guaranteed to be a slave](#) because they can lawfully set the cost of their property as high as they want as a Merchant under the U.C.C. [If you want it really bad from people with a monopoly, then you will get it REALLY bad. Bend over.](#) There are NO constitutional limits on the price government can charge for their monopoly services or property. Those who want no responsibilities can have no [real/PRIVATE rights](#), but only privileges dispensed to wards of the state which are disguised to LOOK*

*like unalienable rights. Obligations and rights are two sides of the same coin, just like self-ownership and personal responsibility. For the biblical version of this paragraph, read 1 Sam. 8:10-22. For the reason God answered Samuel by telling him to allow the people to have a king, read Deut. 28:43-51, which is God's curse upon those who allow a king above them. [Click Here \(https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm\)](https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm) for a detailed description of the legal, moral, and spiritual consequences of violating this paragraph.”*

[SEDM Website, Opening Page; <http://sedm.org>]

## **TABLE OF CONTENTS**

<b>TABLE OF CONTENTS .....</b>	<b>4</b>
<b>TABLE OF AUTHORITIES.....</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>1 Introduction .....</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>2 What does God say to people who are enslaved to a government franchise? .....</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>3 Foundations of socialism.....</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>4 Charles Ponzi, A.K.A. Uncle Sam.....</b>	<b>30</b>
4.1 Social Security .....	31
4.2 Ethical cause and effect .....	31
4.3 A political revolt.....	32
4.4 Blind men bluffed.....	33
4.5 Deferring the Inevitable .....	34
4.6 Conclusion.....	35
<b>5 What causes socialism to take over a culture? .....</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>6 God’s description of life under socialism .....</b>	<b>42</b>
<b>7 Franchises are the main method by which democracies become corrupted, turn socialist, and become “de facto” rather than “de jure” .....</b>	<b>44</b>
<b>8 Jesus refused a domicile, refused to participate in all human franchises, benefits, and privileges, and refused the “civil status” that made them possible .....</b>	<b>50</b>
<b>9 Satan’s greatest sin was abusing “privileges” and “franchises” to make himself equal to or above God .....</b>	<b>52</b>
<b>10 God’s remedy for socialism .....</b>	<b>63</b>
<b>11 Why God COMMANDS believers who are victimized by socialist wealth redistribution to confront the benefit recipients and also not associate with them .....</b>	<b>73</b>
<b>12 Dialog with someone who said they wanted to reenter or had reentered the system .....</b>	<b>74</b>
12.1 Question.....	74
12.2 Answer.....	75
12.3 Response to person who reentered the system.....	75
12.4 Response to the previous section by person who switched sides.....	76
12.5 Response to the response .....	76
<b>13 Rebutted Frequently Asked Questions (FAQs) and Accusations .....</b>	<b>78</b>
13.1 You’re being too black and white. Life is grey .....	78
13.2 Aren’t I receiving my own money back plus interest? How can that be theft? .....	95
13.3 Isn’t it uncharitable or legalistic to deny charity to the aged and deserving? .....	95
13.4 Isn’t it judgmental to call the benefits people receive “stealing”? .....	96
13.5 Can you help me? I want to continue receiving socialist benefits but no longer want to be subject to federal jurisdiction.....	98
13.6 Why won’t you help me enforce statutory privileges under a franchise rather than common law rights? Don’t you claim to want to help people obey the law?.....	100
<b>14 How to minimize violations of God’s law as a socialist.....</b>	<b>109</b>
14.1 Voting .....	109
14.2 Jury Duty .....	109
<b>15 What those who have chosen socialism and government slavery can and cannot use on our website .....</b>	<b>113</b>
<b>16 God promises to curse those who disobey His law as documented herein.....</b>	<b>113</b>
<b>17 Resources for Further Study and Rebuttal .....</b>	<b>115</b>



## **TABLE OF AUTHORITIES**

### **Constitutional Provisions**

Art. 4, Section 4.....	77
Article 1, Section 9, Clause 8 .....	17
Article 4, section 4 of the United States Constitution .....	62
Bill of Rights .....	105
Fifth Amendment .....	28
Sixteenth Amendment .....	37

### **Statutes**

18 U.S.C. §1001 .....	76
18 U.S.C. §1111 .....	62
18 U.S.C. §201 .....	77, 109
18 U.S.C. §208 .....	54, 70, 78
18 U.S.C. §211 .....	77
18 U.S.C. §2381: Treason .....	62
18 U.S.C. §641 .....	98
18 U.S.C. §912 .....	76, 77
26 U.S.C. §6065 .....	49
26 U.S.C. §7206 and 7207 .....	77
26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(26) .....	30
26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(30) .....	98
26 U.S.C. §871(a)(3) .....	100
39 Statutes at Large, 742, c. 458 [Comp. St. §§ 8932a - 8932uu] .....	111
42 U.S.C. §1301(a)(1) .....	98
5 U.S.C. §3331 .....	26
8 U.S.C. §1401 .....	29
Act of Congress of March 22, 1882, 22 Stat. 30 (Comp. St. § 1265) .....	112
California Civil Code, §1589 .....	99
District, Code, § 1, c. 1, p. 5 .....	112
Foreign Sovereign Immunities Act, 28 U.S.C. Chapter 97 .....	62
Internal Revenue Code .....	44
Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A .....	29, 98
Privacy Act, 5 U.S.C. §552a(a)(13) .....	29
Rev. Stat. (Comp. St. § 1691) .....	113
Social Security Act .....	98
Social Security Act of 1935 .....	44
Title 42 of the U.S. Code .....	29
U.C.C. §2-104(1) .....	60

### **Regulations**

20 C.F.R. §422.103 .....	29
20 C.F.R. §422.104 .....	28

### **Cases**

Agnew v. United States. 165 U.S. 35, 44, 17 S.Ct. 235, 41 L.Ed. 624 .....	112
Ashwander v. Tennessee Valley Auth., 297 U.S. 288 (1936) .....	99
Ashwander v. Tennessee Valley Authority, 297 U.S. 288, 56 S.Ct. 466 (1936) .....	102
Block v. State, 100 Indiana, 357, 362 .....	112
Budd v. People of State of New York, 143 U.S. 517 (1892) .....	28
Camden v. Allen, 2 Dutch., 398 .....	39, 73

Chas. Wolff Packing Co. v. Court of Industrial Relations of State of Kansas, 262 U.S. 522, 43 S.Ct. 630, 633, 67 L.Ed. 1103.....	24
Chicago ex rel. Cohen v. Keane, 64 Ill.2d. 559, 2 Ill.Dec. 285, 357 N.E.2d. 452.....	54
Chicago Park Dist. v. Kenroy, Inc., 78 Ill.2d. 555, 37 Ill.Dec. 291, 402 N.E.2d. 181 .....	54
Clark v. United States, 95 U.S. 539 (1877) .....	70
Clawson v. United States, 114 U.S. 477, 483, 5 S.Ct. 919, 29 L.Ed. 179 .....	112
Cleveland Bd. of Ed. v. LaFleur (1974) 414 U.S. 632, 639-640, 94 S.Ct. 1208, 1215.....	70
Crawford v. United States, 212 U.S. 183, 195, 29 S.Ct. 260, 267 (53 L.Ed. 465, 15 Ann.Cas. 392).....	112
Crowley v. United States, 194 U.S. 461, 24 S.Ct. 731, 48 L.Ed. 1075 .....	112
Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901), Justice Harlan, Dissenting .....	104
Electric Co. v. Dow, 166 U.S. 489, 17 S.Ct. 645, 41 L.Ed. 1088.....	102
Flemming v. Nestor, 363 U.S. 603 (1960) .....	95
Flemming v. Nestor, 363 U.S. 603, 610, 80 S.Ct. 1367 (1960).....	95
Fulton Light, Heat & Power Co. v. State, 65 Misc.Rep. 263, 121 N.Y.S. 536.....	41
Georgia Dep't of Human Resources v. Sistrunk, 249 Ga. 543, 291 S.E.2d. 524 .....	54
Great Falls Manufacturing Co. v. Attorney General, 124 U.S. 581 .....	98
Great Falls Mfg. Co. v. Attorney General, 124 U.S. 581, 8 S.Ct. 631, 31 L.Ed. 527.....	102
Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 (1906) .....	27
Hanson v. Vernon, 27 Ia., 47 .....	39, 73
Heilman's Estate, Matter of, 37 Ill.App.3d. 390, 345 N.E.2d. 536, 540 .....	28
Indiana State Ethics Comm'n v. Nelson (Ind App), 656 N.E.2d. 1172 .....	54
Jersey City v. Hague, 18 N.J. 584, 115 A.2d. 8.....	53
Julliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884).....	59, 96
Katz v. Brandon, 156 Conn. 521, 245 A.2d. 579, 586 .....	24
Leonard v. Vicksburg, etc., R. Co., 198 U.S. 416, 422, 25 S.Ct. 750, 49 L.Ed. 1108 .....	102
Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 (1874).....	107
Madlener v. Finley, 161 Ill.App.3d. 796, 113 Ill.Dec. 712, 515 N.E.2d. 697 (1st Dist) .....	54
Magill v. Browne, Fed.Cas. No. 8952, 16 Fed.Cas. 408 .....	103
Martin v. Hunter, 1 Wheat. 304, 326, 331 .....	104
Matter of Mayor of N.Y., 11 Johns., 77 .....	39, 73
McCulloch v. Md., 4 Wheat. 431 .....	39, 73
Miller v. United States, 38 App. D.C. 36 .....	112
Montana Power Co. v. Bokma, Mont., 457 P.2d. 769, 772, 773 .....	24
Northern Liberties v. St. John's Church, 13 Pa. St., 104.....	39, 73
Olmstead v. United States, 277 U.S. 438, 478 (1928).....	88
Osborn v. Bank of U.S., 22 U.S. 738 (1824).....	26
Pack v. Southwestern Bell Tel. & Tel. Co., 215 Tenn. 503, 387 S.W.2d. 789, 794.....	24
Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 (1935).....	27
Pierce v. Somerset Ry., 171 U.S. 641, 648, 19 S.Ct. 64, 43 L.Ed. 316 .....	102
Poindexter. v. Greenhow, 114 U.S. 270 .....	88
Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (Supreme Court 1895) .....	58
Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (1895) .....	41, 108
Pray v. Northern Liberties, 31 Pa.St., 69 .....	39, 73
Ringe Co. v. Los Angeles County, 262 U.S. 700, 43 S.Ct. 689, 692, 67 L.Ed. 1186.....	24
Russell v. Wheeler, 165 Colo. 296, 439 P.2d. 43, 46 .....	24
Sinking Fund Cases, 99 U.S. 700 (1878) .....	72
Spencer v. United States, 169 F. 562 565, 95 C. C. A. 60.....	112
Spooner v. McConnell, 22 F. 939, 943.....	59, 96
Spring v. Constantino, 168 Conn. 563, 362 A.2d. 871, 875 .....	25
St. Louis Casting Co. v. Prendergast Construction Co., 260 U.S. 469 .....	99
St. Louis Malleable Casting Co. v. Prendergast Construction Co., 260 U.S. 469, 43 S.Ct. 178, 67 L.Ed. 351 .....	102
State ex rel. Eli Lilly and Co. v. Gaertner, Mo.App., 619 S.W.2d. 761, 764 .....	25
State ex rel. Nagle v. Sullivan, 98 Mont. 425, 40 P.2d. 995, 99 A.L.R. 321 .....	53
The Antelope, 23 U.S. 66, 10 Wheat 66, 6 L.Ed. 268 (1825) .....	30
Tyson & Bro.-United Theatre Ticket Offices v. Banton, 273 U.S. 418, 47 S.Ct. 426, 71 L.Ed. 718.....	24
U.S. v. Butler, 297 U.S. 1 (1936) .....	39, 107
U.S. v. Cooper, 312 U.S. 600,604, 61 S.Ct. 742 (1941).....	59

United States Railroad Retirement Board v. Fritz, 449 U.S. 166 (1980) .....	95
United States v. Boylan, 898 F.2d. 230, 29 Fed.Rules.Evid.Serv. 1223 (CA1 Mass) .....	54
United States v. Cruikshank, 92 U.S. 542 (1875).....	96
United States v. Griffith et al., 55 App.D.C. 123, 2 F.2d. 925 (1924) .....	110
United States v. Holzer, 816 F.2d. 304 (CA7 Ill) .....	54
United States v. Lee, 106 U. S., at 220.....	54
United States v. Little, 889 F.2d. 1367 (CA5 Miss).....	54
United States v. Winstar Corp. 518 U.S. 839 (1996) .....	54
Wall v. Parrot Silver & Copper Co., 244 U.S. 407.....	99
Wall v. Parrot Silver & Copper Co., 244 U.S. 407, 411, 412, 37 S.Ct. 609, 61 L.Ed. 1229 .....	102
Williams v. United States (C. C. A.), 275 F. 129, 131 .....	112
Wilson v. Omaha Indian Tribe 442 U.S. 653, 667 (1979).....	59

## Other Authorities

“Kingdom of Heaven” Defined in Scripture, Exhibit #01.014 .....	83
1 Hamilton's Works, ed. 1885, 270 .....	57
3 Blackstone (Cooley’s 4th Ed.) p. 363.....	112
6 Words and Phrases, 5583, 5584 .....	103
63C American Jurisprudence 2d, Public Officers and Employees, §247 (1999) .....	54
A J. Lien, “Privileges and Immunities of Citizens of the United States,” in Columbia University Studies in History, Economics, and Public Law, vol. 54, p. 31 .....	103
About SSNs and TINs on Government Forms and Correspondence, Form #05.012 .....	41
Abraham Lincoln.....	96
Adam and Eve .....	15, 109
Affidavit of Duress: Illegal Tax Enforcement by De Facto Officers, Form #02.005 .....	49, 62
Al Gore.....	95
Alexis de Tocqueville.....	45
American Association of Retired Persons (AARP).....	35
Andrew Klavan .....	18
Atlas Shrugged, Ayn Rand.....	40
Avoiding Traps in Government Forms, Form #12.023 .....	59
Ayn Rand .....	40
Baron Montesquieu .....	39
Bernie Madoff.....	30
Black’s Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition, p. 1095 .....	41
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1229.....	24
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1230.....	25
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1231.....	24
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1232.....	24
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269.....	38, 60
Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 625.....	27, 28
Bouvier’s Maxims of Law, 1856.....	97
Butt Prints in the Sand, Family Guardian Fellowship .....	19
C. S. Lewis .....	32
Caesar .....	106, 109
Carlo "Charles" Ponzi .....	30
Carlo Ponzi, A.K.A. Uncle Sam, Gary North.....	30
Charles de Montesquieu .....	44, 45, 46
Charles Ponzi, the Italian-American immigrant .....	33
Citizenship Status v. Tax Status, Form #10.011 .....	70
Congressional Record-Senate, Volume 77- Part 4, June 10, 1933, Page 12522 .....	99
Congressman Michelle Bachman .....	37
Cooley, Const. Lim., 479 .....	39, 73, 107
Counterfeit Gods, Tim Keller.....	109
De Facto Government Scam, Form #05.043 .....	45, 66
De Tocqueville .....	46

Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007 .....	23, 83, 90
Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter IV .....	46
Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter VI .....	47
Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter XIV .....	46
Do Not Love the World, Grace to You .....	79
Essay entitled “Trial by Jury”, Lysander Spooner.....	37
Exhibits #05.025 and #05.051 .....	101
Family Guardian Fellowship .....	49
Federal and State Income Taxation of Individuals Course, Form #12.003 .....	100
Federal Courts and IRS’ Own IRM Say NOT RESPONSIBLE for its actions or its words or following its own internal procedures, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	71
Federal Reserve .....	37, 69
Form #05.001 .....	59
Form #05.002 .....	102
Form #05.003 .....	101
Form #05.020 .....	58
Form #05.030 .....	58, 59, 104
Form #05.033 .....	101
Form #05.042 .....	101
Form #05.046 .....	101, 104
Form #05.048 .....	58
Form #05.050 .....	58
Form #10.002 .....	58
Form #12.025 .....	59
Foundations of Freedom Course, Form #12.021, Video 4 .....	101
Franklin Delano Roosevelt (FDR).....	23, 37
Franklin Roosevelt .....	34
Frederic Bastiat .....	101
Frequently Asked Questions (FAQs) page.....	98
Garden of Eden.....	15
George Bernard Shaw .....	2
George Bernard Shaw, Encyclopedia Britannica, 1946 ed., Vol. 20, P. 895.....	23
George H. Van Kirk .....	111
George Orwell.....	106
God’s Commandments to Nations and Political Rulers, SEDM .....	20
Government “Benefits” Scam, Form #05.040 .....	17
Government Conspiracy to Destroy the Separation of Powers, Form #05.023 .....	71
Government Corruption, Form #11.401 .....	49
Government Corruption: Causes and Remedies, Form #12.026 .....	49
Government Establishment of Religion, Form #05.038 .....	71
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030.....	20, 71, 84, 104
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 2.15 .....	44
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 22.4 .....	56
Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 8: Introduction to the Law of Agency.....	84
Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302.....	41, 59, 70
Hierarchy of Sovereignty: The Power to Create is the Power to Tax, Family Guardian Fellowship .....	88
Hot Issues: Laws of Property, SEDM .....	20
How Scoundrels Corrupted Our Republican Form of Government, Family Guardian Fellowship.....	20, 72, 79
Howard B. Rand, Digest of the Divine Law (Merrimac, Mass.: Destiny Publishers, 1943, 1959), p. 111 .....	35
Injury Defense Franchise and Agreement, Form #06.027.....	60
IRS Form 1040 .....	74
IRS Form 1040 tax returns .....	75
Jared Sparks, ed., The Writings of George Washington (Boston: Ferdinand Andrews, 1838), IX, 137 .....	35
Jesus Christ.....	17
Jesus Is An Anarchist, James Redford .....	52, 106
Joe Bannister, Former IRS Agent.....	76
John Berger .....	91



Justice Antonin Scalia, U.S. Supreme Court .....	108
Kingdom of Heaven, Inc. ....	108
Lansdell, Tithe in Scripture, p. 148 .....	36
Larry Becraft .....	78
Lawfully Avoiding Government Obligations, Form #12.040 .....	59
Laws of Property, Form #14.018.....	20
Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001 .....	58
Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001, Section 2 .....	115
Laws of the Bible, Litigation Tool #09.001, Section 3 .....	64
Legal Deception, Propaganda, and Fraud, Form #05.014 .....	70, 103
Lysander Spooner.....	37
Marcus Tullius Cicero, 106-43 B.C. ....	102
Mark Twain .....	18, 82
Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible; Henry, M., 1996, c1991, under Prov. 11:1 .....	62
Message to the Voting Cattle, Larken Rose .....	96
Mitt Romney .....	73
Money v. Mammon; His Holy Church.....	68
Montesquieu .....	40
Natural Law, Chapter 1, Section IV, Lysander Spooner .....	103
Naughty and Nice, Newbreak.org .....	94
Nimrod .....	67
Non-Resident Non-Person Position, Form #05.020 .....	60, 61
Obama .....	67
Otto von Bismarck .....	34
Path to Freedom, Form #09.015, Section 8.5 .....	63
Pericles .....	68
Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Mt 23:13–39). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress.....	51
Pharaoh.....	16, 22, 92
Philosophy of Liberty, SEDM.....	101
Policy Document: Corruption Within Modern Christianity, Form #08.012, Section 5.5 .....	98
Ponzi.....	31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 96, 99
Ponzi Scheme .....	96
President Bush.....	26
President Obama .....	73, 100
President Obama Says US Will NOT Impose Its Political or Economic System on Anyone, Exhibit #05.053 .....	61
Presumption: Chief Weapon for Unlawfully Enlarging Federal Jurisdiction, Form #05.017 .....	70
Proof That There Is a "Straw Man", Form #05.042 .....	58
Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Second Edition, Roscoe Pound, 1925, p. 2 .....	87
Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Second Edition, Roscoe Pound, 1925, p. 4 .....	100, 103
Redefining Religion, Newbreak.org.....	90
Requirement for Consent, Form #05.003 .....	70
Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033 .....	17, 71, 96, 106
Resignation of Compelled Social Security Trustee, Form #06.002 .....	99, 100, 115
Roman statesman Cicero .....	102
Ron Paul .....	76
Roscoe Pound.....	100, 108
Rousas Rushdoony .....	87
Rules of Presumption and Statutory Interpretation, Litigation Tool #01.006 .....	70
Ryrie, C. C. (1972). A survey of Bible doctrine. Chicago: Moody Press.....	16, 52
Samuel Adams.....	78
SEDM.....	2
SEDM About Us Page, Section 1 .....	69
SEDM About Us Page, Section 9, Item 1.6.....	64
SEDM Articles of Mission, Form #01.004, Section 1.12.....	69
SEDM Disclaimer, Section 4 .....	105
SEDM Exhibit #02.008 .....	101

SEDM Exhibit #03.005 .....	108
SEDM Form #05.040 .....	99
SEDM Forums, Section 3.1: General Law: Are we missing a Key element? .....	63
SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001 .....	15, 98, 100
SEDM Political Dictionary .....	74
SEDM Website, Opening Page .....	3, 21
Senate Document #43, Senate Resolution No. 62, p. 9, paragraph 2, 1933 .....	23
Separation of Powers Doctrine .....	98
Social Security: Mark of the Beast, Form #11.407 .....	99, 115
Socialism: The New American Civil Religion, Form #05.016.....	22, 115
Socialism: The New American Civil Religion, Form #05.016, Section 5.3 .....	65
Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online, Form #10.004.....	70
State Income Taxes, Form #05.031 .....	71
Tacitus, Roman historian 55-117 A.D.....	65
Tacitus, the famous Roman historian .....	65
Terms of Use and Service, Form #01.016 .....	15
The “Trade or Business” Scam, Form #05.001 .....	41
The Church in Satan's City, March 20, 2016.....	61
The Crisis of Church Incorporation, Form #13.017 .....	93
The Government "Benefits" Scam, Form #05.040.....	72, 99
The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, pp. 56-58.....	36
The Kingdom Comes, Chapter 9: Temples and Churches; His Holy Church .....	69
The Law, Frederic Bastiat .....	49
The Money Scam, Form #05.041 .....	72
The Privileges and Immunities of State Citizenship, Roger Howell, PhD, 1918, pp. 9-10.....	103
The Spirit of Laws, Charles de Montesquieu, 1758 .....	40, 44, 45
The Unforgiveable Sin, Don Carson, The Gospel Coalition .....	18
Thomas Jefferson .....	77, 99
Thomas Jefferson: Declaration of Independence, 1776. ME 1:29, Papers 1:429 .....	95
Town Crier .....	68
Trade or Business Scam, Form #05.001, Sections 9.1-9.2 .....	78
Trading Away Your Freedom by Foreign Entanglements, John Birch Society .....	61
U.S. Supreme Court .....	25, 39, 41, 44, 53, 57, 88, 89, 95, 107
We Must Leave the World to Save the World (Sanctification), SEDM Blog .....	79
Webster’s Dictionary.....	73
Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1118 .....	23
Wendell Berry, "Discipline and Hope" in A Continuous Harmony (1972), p. 124.....	2
What Happened to Justice?, Form #06.012 .....	71
What is “law”?, Form #05.048 .....	58, 105
What is “law”?, Form #05.048, Section 16 .....	102
Why All Man-Made Law is Religious in Nature, Family Guardian Fellowship .....	106
Why Are Conservatives So Mean?, Andrew Klavan .....	18, 47
Why Domicile and Becoming a “Taxpayer” Require Your Consent, Form #05.002.....	21, 57
Why Statutory Civil Law is Law for Government and Not Private Persons, Form #05.037 .....	41
Why You are a Political Citizen but Civil Non-Citizen, National, and Nonresident Alien, Form #05.006 .....	41, 59
Why You Aren’t Eligible for Social Security, Form #06.001 .....	98, 115
Why Your Government is Either a Thief or You are a “Public Officer” for Income Tax Purposes, Form #05.008 ..	30, 41, 72
Xenophon .....	40
Your Exclusive Right to Declare or Establish Your Civil Status, Form #13.008.....	17, 59, 71, 101
Zeus .....	68

## Scriptures

1 John 2:3-6.....	94
1 John 3 .....	88, 89
1 John 3:3-8.....	86
1 John 3:4-15 .....	84, 86

1 John 3:4-9 .....	90
1 John 3:9 .....	87
1 John 4:16 .....	94
1 Peter 2:1 .....	107
1 Peter 4:17 .....	93
1 Sam. 8:10-22 .....	3, 21
1 Sam. 8:4-8 .....	61
1 Samuel .....	67
1 Thess. 4: 9-12 .....	85
1 Ti 3:6 .....	16, 52
1 Tim. 5:8 .....	65
1 Tim. 6:10 .....	38, 57
1 Tim. 6:6 .....	2
2 Chron. 21:6 .....	22
2 Corinthians 6:17-18 .....	2, 75
2 Kings 8:18 .....	22
2 Sam. 11 .....	96
2 Sam. 16:8 .....	21
2 Sam. 3:18 .....	55
2 Sam. 7:8-9 .....	55
2 Thess. 2:7-12 .....	82
Acts 5:29 .....	81
Acts 6:1-2 .....	67
Acts 6:3-6 .....	67
Apostles .....	67
Caleb the son of Jephunneh .....	23
Christ .....	63, 90
Christ Jesus .....	50
Deut. 10: 14 .....	35
Deut. 10:15 .....	53
Deut. 10:20 .....	77
Deut. 16:10,11 .....	35
Deut. 23:18 .....	76
Deut. 24:20-21 .....	36
Deut. 27:19 .....	36
Deut. 28:1-14 .....	115
Deut. 28:15-68 .....	23, 114
Deut. 28:43-51 .....	3, 20, 21, 79
Deut. 6:13, 24 .....	77
Deuteronomy 16:17 .....	67
Deuteronomy in Chapter 28 .....	113
Devil .....	84
Ecc. 3:1-8 .....	19
Eccl. 8:19 .....	68
Eleventh Commandment .....	85
Eph. 5:11 .....	75
Eve .....	77
Ex. 36:3-7 .....	35
Ex. 9:29 .....	35
Exodus 20 .....	83
Exodus 20: 1-4 .....	20
Exodus 20:3 .....	61, 86
Exodus 22:2 .....	36
Exodus 22:7-8 .....	95
Exodus 23:32-33 .....	60, 83, 86, 108
Exodus 4 .....	56
Ezekial 20:10-20 .....	61

Ezekial 28:16.....	62
Ezekiel 16:41.....	60
Ezekiel 28:11-15.....	16, 52
Ezekiel 28:13-19.....	57
First Commandment.....	83
Garden of Eden.....	109
Gen. 47.....	92
Gen. 47:13-26.....	56
Genesis.....	86
God.....	74
Heaven.....	91
Hebrews 6:1-7.....	77, 94
Holy Ghost.....	67
Hos. 12:7, 8.....	62
Husband of Bathsheba.....	96
I Cor. 10:26.....	35
I Samuel 8: 4-19.....	35
Isaiah 1:1-26.....	69
Isaiah 1:17.....	36
Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14.....	16
Isaiah 42:21-25.....	84
Isaiah 52:1-3.....	83
James 1.....	87, 88, 94
James 1:27.....	36, 50, 61, 86
James 3:17.....	107
James 4:4.....	38, 51, 60, 78, 86, 107
James_1:27.....	67
Jer 7:4.....	51
Jer. 22:3.....	37
Jer. 32:26-44.....	22
Jer. 5:26-31.....	1, 83
Jer. 7:5-7.....	36
Jeremiah 5.....	44
John 10: 1-6.....	82
John 12:44.....	53
John 14:21.....	94
John 15:19-21.....	52
John 5:30.....	108
John 5:37.....	53
John 6:38.....	53
John 7:49.....	70
Joshua 1:2-5.....	54
Joshua the son of Nun.....	23
Judges 2:1-4.....	60, 83, 86, 89, 109
Judges 3:12.....	21
Judges 4:1-3.....	21
King David.....	96
Kingdom of Heaven.....	83
Koran.....	56
Lake of Fire.....	87
Lev. 18:1-5, 24-30.....	18
Lev. 22:21.....	35
Lev. 25:35-43.....	55, 57, 97
Lev. 25:42.....	54
Lev. 25:55.....	54
Levites.....	66
Lot.....	80

Lucifer.....	109
Luk_22:25 .....	64
Luke 12:1 .....	107
Luke 16:13 .....	89
Luke 22:42 .....	53
Luke 9:48 .....	53
Mar 10:42 .....	64
Mark 10:25.....	78
Mark 10:42-45 .....	53, 97
Matt 10:16-20.....	95
Matt. 10:34-39.....	106
Matt. 20:25-28.....	53, 97
Matt. 23:27-28.....	107
Matt. 23:8-12.....	53
Matt. 7:12 .....	57
Matt. 7:15-20.....	75, 94
Matt. 7:21 .....	89
Matt. 7:21-23.....	18, 90
Matt. 7:23 .....	63
Matt. 8:18-20.....	52
Moses .....	22, 64, 66, 67, 68, 81, 92
Mt 3:9.....	51
New Testament.....	91, 115
Nicanor.....	67
Nicolas.....	67
Numbers 14:24 .....	54
Numbers 14:26-38.....	23, 92
Old Testament .....	91
Paul.....	80, 87
Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5-11). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress .....	50, 53
Pharaoh.....	92
Pharisees.....	82, 90, 115
Phil 2:5-11 .....	50
Philip .....	67
Prochorus.....	67
Prov. 1:10-19.....	39
Prov. 1:20-33.....	17
Prov. 1:23-33.....	75
Prov. 11:15 .....	74
Prov. 12:24.....	2, 46
Prov. 20:8 .....	22
Prov. 28:9 .....	70
Prov. 29:26.....	60
Prov. 29:4 .....	60
Prov. 6:11 .....	46
Prov. 6:1-5.....	74
Prov. 8:13 .....	77
Proverbs 1:10-19 .....	39, 74
Proverbs 17:18.....	74
Ps. 24: 1 .....	35
Psalms 119:155.....	70
Psalms 146:9.....	36
Psalms 68:5-6.....	36
Psalms 94:20-23.....	102
Rev. 17 .....	38
Rev. 17:15 .....	38



Rev. 17:1-6.....	38
Rev. 17:5 .....	60
Rev. 18:1-8.....	1, 100
Rev. 19:19 .....	38, 60
Rev. 20 .....	18
Rev. 3:16 .....	17
Revelation .....	87
Rom. 13: 1-8.....	35
Romans 12:9.....	107
Romans 6:2.....	80
Satan.....	56, 63, 81, 83, 84, 88, 89, 90
Ten Commandments .....	105, 106, 109
The Beast.....	89
Timon .....	67
Zech. 7:10.....	37

# 1 Introduction

This policy document will discuss the legal standing of people who:

1. Were once Members in Good Standing.
2. Subsequently made a fully informed decision, usually under threat or duress, to reenter the system.
3. Would like to live as much as they can within the confines of God's law while involuntarily enslaved to the government's franchises.
4. Would like to know what the Bible says about those in their condition.
5. Would like to know our approach towards them as Members.

This document is NOT intended or directed at any of the following:

1. All people.
2. All Christians.
3. Those who are not members.
4. Those in your family who are not believers or who don't agree with your position but have not evidence to prove why they are correct.
5. Those who are ignorant about whether behaving as a franchisee is in fact unlawful in their case because they are a state national but don't know it.

The dividing line between those who are the subject of this document and those who are not is the awareness and knowledge they have about whether their participation in franchises is unlawful, injurious, or a criminal offense. Why? Because:

1. Like the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve had to acquire knowledge/fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and WILLFULLY sin before God ejected them from the Garden.
2. In the legal field, crime is impossible without "mens rea", meaning malicious intent. Malicious intent or "mens rea" occurs when a person knows that what they are doing is illegal, harmful, or criminal and yet they choose to do it anyway to the injury of someone else.
3. When judges sentence those who have engaged in crime, the degree of punishment is measured by the extent of their "mens rea", or malicious intent. All such punishment ultimately results in some form of separation or "disfellowship" from society or the group they injured.

An example of someone who might satisfy the above would be someone who:

1. Participated in our ministry for years.
2. Contributed regularly to our forums.
3. Demonstrated the knowledge that their participation in franchises as a state national was unlawful and even criminal. That illegality is described in the resources in the last section of this document.
4. Refused to apply anything they learned to their own life. This is a direct violation of our SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001 and a THEFT of our services in violation of our Terms of Use and Service, Form #01.016.
5. Signed up for all available franchises and acted just like all the other sheep and government farm animals in society.
6. Even went to work for the government and in effect became a money launderer for the money they KNOW is stolen and the product of their own and others criminal activity.
7. Are only interested in the subject matter for commercial reasons or as a way to profit themselves personally and individually, not as a way to help or protect or love others. That was the motive of Satan himself, as we show later in section 9, who ALSO was ejected from fellowship in the Garden of Eden along with Adam and Eve.

Section 12 later describes a real person who did the above, and this document was written as a rebuttal to that person. The above-described ABUSE of the PRIVILEGES of our services are similar to the abuses of Satan himself of the privileges of God and we reject and expel and rebuke members who do it for the same reasons God did the same thing to Satan:

## WHAT WAS SATAN'S SIN?

*Satan's sin was done from a privileged position. He was not a deprived creature who had not drunk deeply of the blessings of God before he sinned. Indeed, Ezekiel 28:11–15 declares some astounding things about the privileged position in which he sinned. That this passage has Satan in view seems most likely if one eliminates the idea that it is a mythical tale of heathen origin and if one takes the language at all plainly and not merely as filled with Oriental exaggerations. Ezekiel "saw the work and activity of Satan, whom the king of Tyre was emulating in so many ways." Satan's privileges included (1) full measure of wisdom (v. 12), (2) perfection in beauty (v. 12), (3) dazzling appearance (v. 13), (4) a place of special prominence as the anointed cherub that covered God's throne (v. 14). Verse 15 (ASV) says all that the Bible says about the origin of sin—"till unrighteousness was found in thee." It is clear, however, that Satan was not created as an evil being, for the verse clearly declares he was perfect when created. Furthermore, God did not make him sin; he sinned of his own volition and assumed full responsibility for that sin; and because of his great privileges, it is obvious that Satan sinned with full knowledge.*

*Satan's sin was pride (1 Ti 3:6). The specific details of how that pride erupted are given in Isaiah 14:13–14 and are summarized in the assertion, "I will be like the most High" (v. 14). [Ryrie, C. C. (1972). A survey of Bible doctrine. Chicago: Moody Press]*

We will try very hard to ensure that this document does not represent OUR personal views or emotions. Rather, it will describe what God Himself said about this subject in the Bible as much as possible. We try to avoid emotional or personal views and only take positions that are based on legal evidence and scripture. Hence, if you have a problem with our approach, then please talk to The Man, and not us.

God even has something to say to those described in this pamphlet who aren't interested in what He has to say on this subject:

*"Woe to the rebellious children," says the Lord, "Who take counsel [from government and idolaters], but not of Me, and who devise plans, but not of My Spirit [for My laws], that they may add sin to sin; who walk to go down to Egypt, and have not asked My advice, to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore the strength of Pharaoh shall be your shame, and trust in the shadow of Egypt shall be your humiliation..."*

*Now go, write it before them on a tablet, and note it on a scroll, that it may be for time to come, forever and ever: that this is a rebellious people, lying children, children who will not hear the law of the Lord; who say to the seers, "Do not see," and to the prophets, "Do not prophesy to us right things" Speak to us smooth [politically correct] things, prophesy deceits [in the IRS publications]. Get out of the way, turn aside from the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us."*

*Therefore thus says the Holy One of Israel:*

*"Because you despise this word, and trust in [government] oppression and [sexual] perversity, and rely on them, therefore this iniquity shall be to you like a breach ready to fall, a bulge in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly, in an instant. And He shall break it like the breaking of the potter's vessel, which is broken in pieces; He shall not spare. So there shall not be found among its fragments a shard to take fire from the hearth, or to take water from the cistern."*  
*[Isaiah 30:1-3, 8-14, Bible, NKJV]*

### **The Call of Wisdom**

*Wisdom calls aloud outside;  
She raises her voice in the open squares.  
She cries out in the chief concourses,[b]  
At the openings of the gates in the city  
She speaks her words:  
"How long, you simple ones, will you love simplicity?  
For scorners delight in their scorning,  
And fools hate knowledge.  
Turn at my rebuke;  
Surely I will pour out my spirit on you;  
I will make my words known to you.  
Because I have called and you refused,  
I have stretched out my hand and no one regarded,  
Because you disdained all my counsel,  
And would have none of my rebuke,  
I also will laugh at your calamity;  
I will mock when your terror comes,  
When your terror comes like a storm,*

And your destruction comes like a whirlwind,  
When distress and anguish come upon you.

“Then they will call on me, but I will not answer;  
They will seek me diligently, but they will not find me.  
Because they hated knowledge  
And did not choose the fear of the Lord,  
They would have none of my counsel  
And despised my every rebuke.  
Therefore they shall eat the fruit of their own way,  
And be filled to the full with their own fancies.  
For the turning away of the simple will slay them,  
And the complacency of fools will destroy them;  
But whoever listens to me will dwell safely,  
And will be secure, without fear of evil.”  
[Prov. 1:20-33, Bible, NKJV]

Note that this document is NOT an attempt to do any of the following:

1. Denigrate or disparage people who were FORCED into government dependence and who have no means to take care of themselves in their old age OTHER than a socialist benefit.
2. Make us somehow superior or better than anyone else because we didn't do the things in this pamphlet.

We seek only to:

1. Prevent people from consuming our valuable time and resources who have no interest in really APPLYING them to eliminate all government franchises and their own involvement in them. In other words, their interest is mainly academic but not APPLICATION oriented.
2. Prevent people from using our materials who have a malicious intent to discredit us by using them for unlawful, harmful, or criminal purposes.
3. Protect the equality and dignity of all.
4. Prevent any one person from becoming legally inferior or a slave to anyone else. Franchises represent the main vehicle for creating inferiority and inequality, which is why we insist that our members avoid them in the first place. We call them “a title of disability”, meaning that they are the OPPOSITE of the “Title of Nobility” forbidden by the U.S. Constitution in Article 1, Section 9, Clause 8. By creating a “title of disability”, the de facto government is indirectly establishing a “Title of Nobility” for those who ADMINISTER or GRANT the franchise. See: Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033.
5. Prevent anyone from being compelled to pay for SOMEONE else's “benefits” against their will. See: Government “Benefits” Scam, Form #05.040.
6. Prevent anyone from being compelled to assume any civil statutory franchise status, such as “person”, “individual”, “taxpayer”, “spouse”, “employer”, “employee”, etc. Any attempt to compel them to do so is a violation of the First Amendment right to NOT associate and the right to NOT contract, where franchises are contracts. This is covered in: Your Exclusive Right to Declare or Establish Your Civil Status, Form #13.008.

Jesus Christ said those who refuse to be either cold or hot, He “vomits” them out of His mouth, and that is what we are called to do. By “vomit” we mean making former members into Members in Bad Standing. Any organization that refuses discipline on its own members according to its own system of laws is a mere social club and not a real religion:

“So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.”  
[Rev. 3:16, Bible, NKJV]

Then the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, “Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: ‘I am the Lord your God. According to the doings of the land of Egypt [Babylon/District of Criminals], where you dwelt, you shall not do; and according to the doings of the land of Canaan, where I am bringing you, you shall not do; nor shall you walk in their ordinances. You shall observe My judgments and keep My ordinances, to walk in them: I am the Lord your God. You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, which if a man does, he shall live by them: I am the Lord.

[. . .]

1       *'Do not defile yourselves with any of these things; for by all these the nations are defiled, which I am casting*  
2 *out before you. **For the land is defiled; therefore I visit the punishment of its iniquity upon it, and the land***  
3 ***vomits out its inhabitants. You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, and shall not commit any***  
4 ***of these abominations, either any of your own nation or any stranger who dwells among you (for all these***  
5 ***abominations the men of the land have done, who were before you, and thus the land is defiled), lest the land***  
6 ***vomit you out also when you defile it, as it vomited out the nations that were before you. For whoever commits***  
7 ***any of these abominations, the persons who commit them shall be cut off from among their people.***

8       *'Therefore you shall keep My ordinance, so that you do not commit any of these abominable customs which*  
9 *were committed before you, and that you do not defile yourselves by them: I am the Lord your God.'*  
10 *[Lev. 18:1-5, 24-30, Bible, NKJV]*

11       The above admonition of Jesus is also described elsewhere in the Bible as the ONLY “unforgiveable sin”:

12       **The Peril of Not Progressing**

13       *Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary principles of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying*  
14 *again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, of the doctrine of baptisms, of*  
15 *laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this we will do if God permits.*

16       **For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become**  
17 **partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they**  
18 **fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and**  
19 **put Him to an open shame.**

20       *For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is*  
21 *cultivated, receives blessing from God; but if it bears thorns and briers, it is rejected and near to being cursed,*  
22 *whose end is to be burned.”*  
23 *[Hebrews 6:1-7, Bible, NKJV]*

24  
25       **I Never Knew You**

26       *“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My*  
27 *Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out*  
28 *demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?’ And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew*  
29 *you; depart from Me, **you who practice lawlessness!**’*  
30 *[Matt. 7:21-23, Bible, NKJV]*

31       Andrew Klavan talks about the political implications of the above “peril of not progressing” in the following wonderful  
32 video:

**Why Are Conservatives So Mean?**, Andrew Klavan  
<https://youtu.be/sC6MnwknfmU>

33       Don Carson of The Gospel Coalition (TGC) explains WHY the unforgiveable sin is unforgiveable. In the legal field, the  
34 reason would be called “willful violation of a known legal duty”. A motivation is willful if it is fully informed, deliberate  
35 choice.

**The Unforgiveable Sin**, Don Carson, The Gospel Coalition  
<https://youtu.be/mK1dIDCY1rI>

36       Those who would advocate grace and mercy toward people who have committed the unforgivable sin in effect are heretics  
37 who themselves have committed the unforgivable sin. Even Jesus found cause to disfellowship with certain types of people  
38 named above and He was the example of the ideal source of compassion and mercy. Not all situations are an occasion for  
39 grace and mercy according to Christ. He will preside over everyone at the final judgment, including Christians. Rev. 20.  
40 If he didn’t do this, he would be a wuss and may as well be a liberal progressive democrat hypocrite like the financial  
41 terrorists that we fight in what Mark Twain calls “the District of Criminals”.

42       **Everything Has Its Time**



To everything there is a season,  
A time for every purpose under heaven:

A time to be born,  
And a time to die;  
A time to plant,  
And a time to pluck what is planted;  
A time to kill,  
And a time to heal;  
A time to break down,  
And a time to build up;  
A time to weep,  
And a time to laugh;  
A time to mourn,  
And a time to dance;  
A time to cast away stones,  
And a time to gather stones;  
A time to embrace,  
And a time to refrain from embracing;  
A time to gain,  
And a time to lose;  
A time to keep,  
And a time to throw away;  
A time to tear,  
And a time to sew;  
A time to keep silence,  
And a time to speak;  
A time to love,  
And a time to hate;  
A time of war,  
And a time of peace.  
[Ecc. 3:1-8, Bible, NKJV]

If you want to call our approach in this document “fanatical” or “extreme”, then based on the Bible Jesus fits in EXACTLY the same category because He is the role model for all Christians. Here is our last word on this subject:

Butt Prints in the Sand, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Inspiration/ButtPrints/ButtPrints.htm>

## **2 What does God say to people who are enslaved to a government franchise?**

God warns that those who rebel against His divine law and word in seeking government privileges and “benefits” will bring His wrath and a LITERAL and ETERNAL CURSE against the SOCIETY they are within:

### **Curses of Disobedience [to God's Laws]**

“The alien [Washington, D.C. is legislatively “alien” in relation to states of the Union] who is among you shall rise higher and higher above you, and you shall come down lower and lower [malicious destruction of EQUAL PROTECTION and EQUAL TREATMENT by abusing FRANCHISES]. He shall lend to you [Federal Reserve counterfeiting franchise], but you shall not lend to him; he shall be the head, and you shall be the tail.

“Moreover all these curses shall come upon you and pursue and overtake you, until you are destroyed, because you did not obey the voice of the Lord your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which He commanded you. And they shall be upon you for a sign and a wonder, and on your descendants forever.

“Because you did not serve [ONLY] the Lord your God with joy and gladness of heart, for the abundance of everything, therefore you shall serve your [covetous thieving lawyer] enemies, whom the Lord will send against you, in hunger, in thirst, in nakedness, and in need of everything; and He will put a yoke of iron [franchise codes] on your neck until He has destroyed you. The Lord will bring a nation against you from afar [the District of CRIMINALS], from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flies [the American Eagle], a nation whose language [LEGALESE] you will not understand, a nation of fierce [coercive and fascist] countenance, which does not respect the elderly [assassinates them by denying them healthcare through bureaucratic delays on an Obamacare waiting list] nor show favor to the young [destroying their ability to learn in the public FOOL system]. And they shall eat the increase of your livestock and the produce of your land [with “trade or business” franchise taxes], until you [and all your property] are destroyed [or

*STOLEN/CONFISCATED*]; they shall not leave you grain or new wine or oil, or the increase of your cattle or the offspring of your flocks, until they have destroyed you.  
[Deut. 28:43-51, Bible, NKJV]

The above curse talks about “lending” something, but it never describes WHAT. The thing being “lent” is government/public property under the LAWS of property described below:

1. *Hot Issues: Laws of Property*, SEDM  
<https://sedm.org/laws-of-property/>
2. *Laws of Property*, Form #14.018  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/14-PropProtection/LawsOfProperty.pdf>

The process of “lending” government/public property, in legal terms, is called a privilege or a franchise as described in:

*Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

The process of SEEKING or ACCEPTING government/public property, in legal terms, is called an “election”. They call it this because the result is that you literally “elect” yourself into a government office by accepting the public/government property. This is because a “public officer” is legally defined as someone in charge of the PROPERTY of the PUBLIC.

Those who have MADE such an “election” have a legal obligation to compensate their government benefactor with unlimited SERVITUDE of any kind that the benefactor wants because there are no constitutional limits on what they can charge for their property or services. This “SERVITUDE” is the SAME servitude described in the Ten Commandments, by the way:

#### *The Ten Commandments*

*20 And God spoke all these words, saying:*

*2 “I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

*3 “You shall have no other gods before Me.*

*4 “You shall not make for yourself a carved image—any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth;<sup>5</sup> you shall not bow down to them nor serve them. For I, the LORD your God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generations of those who hate Me, <sup>6</sup> but showing mercy to thousands, to those who love Me and keep My commandments.*  
[Exodus 20: 1-4, Bible, NKJV]

The context of the above is the SLAVERY that results from violating the above commandments. “Before Me” in the above means ABOVE or EQUAL to God in LEGAL authority. The pagan “god” being worshipped in this context is therefore any legal person, whether a collective such as a “state” or an individual political ruler, who has SUPERIOR rights, privileges, or authority than you do under any system of man-made law. Thus, they are UNEQUAL to you and ABOVE you so that you have to “bow down” to them and serve them.

The nature of the above curse and how it is implemented in our present NATION and body politic is described below:

*How Scoundrels Corrupted Our Republican Form of Government*, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>

This curse and the slavery it produces pertains to NATIONS, and not upon individuals. And it will come from and be administered BY NATIONS and POLITICAL RULERS against a wicked people AS INDIVIDUALS. Thus, it is a warning about the structure and nature of how we **choose** to allow ourselves to be CIVILLY governed, as explained in:

*God’s Commandments to Nations and Political Rulers*, SEDM  
<https://sedm.org/gods-commandment-to-nations/>

There are, in fact, aspects of the present government that STILL require our CONSENT. The most important of these is DOMICILE. Choosing a domicile is the legal equivalent of nominating a KING to be ABOVE us and equal to or superior to God. Thus, it creates IDOLATRY from a legal perspective. For proof, see:

*Why Domicile and Becoming a "Taxpayer" Require Your Consent*, Form #05.002  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Domicile.pdf>

God then is warning us in the Ten Commandments NOT to choose a civil domicile within any government that makes itself EQUAL to or ABOVE God or even above US personally because it produces SLAVERY. This is because the foundation of justice itself is EQUALITY of all under REAL law, and SLAVERY can only be implemented by destroying equality. Choosing a CIVIL domicile therefore DESTROYS that equality under the common law and replaces it with privileges, franchise, and partiality under the CIVIL STATUTORY law.

Personal salvation in the Bible is the ONLY means escape from this eternal curse upon one's own society. Salvation removes the eternal curse of sin and death that began after the fall of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

We describe the nature of this curse upon entire NATIONS who implement FRANCHISES and the INEQUALITY they produce on the opening page of our website:

*"People of all races, genders, political beliefs, sexual orientations, and nearly all religions are welcome here. All are treated equally under REAL "law". The only way to remain truly free and equal under the civil law is to avoid seeking government civil services, benefits, property, special or civil status, exemptions, privileges, or special treatment. All such pursuits of government services or property require individual and lawful consent to a franchise and the surrender of inalienable constitutional rights AND EQUALITY in the process, and should therefore be AVOIDED. The rights and equality given up are the "cost" of procuring the "benefit" or property from the government, in fact. Nothing in life is truly "free". Anyone who claims that such "benefits" or property should be free and cost them nothing is a thief who wants to use the government as a means to STEAL on his or her behalf. All just rights spring from responsibilities/obligations under the laws of a higher power. If that higher power is God, you can be truly and objectively free. If it is government, you are guaranteed to be a slave because they can lawfully set the cost of their property as high as they want as a Merchant under the U.C.C. If you want it really bad from people with a monopoly, then you will get it REALLY bad. Bend over. There are NO constitutional limits on the price government can charge for their monopoly services or property. Those who want no responsibilities can have no real/PRIVATE rights, but only privileges dispensed to wards of the state which are disguised to LOOK like unalienable rights. Obligations and rights are two sides of the same coin, just like self-ownership and personal responsibility. For the biblical version of this paragraph, read 1 Sam. 8:10-22. For the reason God answered Samuel by telling him to allow the people to have a king, read Deut. 28:43-51, which is God's curse upon those who allow a king above them. Click Here (<https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>) for a detailed description of the legal, moral, and spiritual consequences of violating this paragraph."*  
[SEDM Website, Opening Page;<http://sedm.org>]

Whenever God's people sin, His punishment is to put them under a wicked tyrant ruler. Here are a few examples:

1. Judges 4:1-3:

*"When Ehud was dead, the children of Israel again did evil in the sight of the LORD. So the LORD sold them into the hand of Jabin king of Canaan, who reigned in Hazor. The commander of his army was Sisera, who dwelt in Harosheth Hagoyim. And the children of Israel cried out to the LORD; for Jabin had nine hundred chariots of iron, and for twenty years he had harshly oppressed the children of Israel."*  
[Judges 4:1-3, Bible, NKJV]

2. Judges 3:12:

*"And the children of Israel again did evil in the sight of the LORD. So the LORD strengthened Eglon king of Moab against Israel, because they had done evil in the sight of the LORD."*  
[Judges 3:12, Bible, NKJV]

3. 2 Sam. 16:8:

*"The LORD has brought upon you all the blood of the house of Saul, in whose place you have reigned; and the LORD has delivered the kingdom into the hand of Absalom your son. So now you are caught in your own evil, because you are a bloodthirsty man!"*  
[2 Sam. 16:8, Bible, NKJV]

4. 2 Kings 8:18, 2 Chron. 21:6:

*“**And he walked in the way of the kings of Israel**, just as the house of Ahab had done, for the daughter of Ahab was his wife; **and he did evil in the sight of the LORD.**”  
[2 Kings 8:18, 2 Chron. 21:6, Bible, NKJV]*

5. Prov. 20:8:

*“A king who sits on the throne of judgment Scatters [spreads] all evil with his eyes.”  
[Prov. 20:8, Bible, NKJV]*

6. Jer. 32:26-44:

*God’s Assurance of the People’s Return*

*Then the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, “Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh. Is there anything too hard for Me? **Therefore thus says the LORD: ‘Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the Chaldeans, into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and he shall take it. And the Chaldeans who fight against this city shall come and set fire to this city and burn it, with the houses on whose roofs they have offered incense to Baal and poured out drink offerings to other gods, to provoke Me to anger; 30 because the children of Israel and the children of Judah have done only evil before Me from their youth.** For the children of Israel have provoked Me only to anger with the work of their hands,’ says the LORD. 31 ‘For this city has been to Me a provocation of My anger and My fury from the day that they built it, even to this day; so I will remove it from before My face **because of all the evil of the children of Israel and the children of Judah, which they have done to provoke Me to anger—they, their kings, their princes, their priests, their prophets, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem.** And they have turned to Me the back, and not the face; though I taught them, rising up early and teaching them, yet they have not listened to receive instruction. But they set their abominations in the house which is called by My name, to defile it. And they built the high places of Baal which are in the Valley of the Son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire to Molech, which I did not command them, nor did it come into My mind that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin.’*

*“Now therefore, thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, concerning this city of which you say, **‘It shall be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence;** Behold, I will gather them out of all countries where I have driven them in My anger, in My fury, and in great wrath; I will bring them back to this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely. They shall be My people, and I will be their God; then I will give them one heart and one way, that they may fear Me forever, for the good of them and their children after them. And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from doing them good; **but I will put My fear in their hearts so that they will not depart from Me.** Yes, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will assuredly plant them in this land, with all My heart and with all My soul.’*

*“For thus says the LORD: ‘Just as I have brought all this great calamity on this people, so I will bring on them all the good that I have promised them. And fields will be bought in this land of which you say, “It is desolate, without man or beast; it has been given into the hand of the Chaldeans.” Men will buy fields for money, sign deeds and seal them, and take witnesses, in the land of Benjamin, in the places around Jerusalem, in the cities of Judah, in the cities of the mountains, in the cities of the lowland, and in the cities of the South; for I will cause their captives to return,’ says the LORD.”  
[Jer. 32:26-44, Bible, NKJV]*

Socialism, by definition, is government through wicked totalitarian rulers who own or at least CONTROL all property and use that authority to enslave ALL. This is exhaustively proven in:

*Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

The most famous metaphor that describes those who enter voluntary slavery is the Israelites living under slavery to Pharaoh. Even when Moses offered them freedom, they grumbled against him, preferring the comfort of the predictable slave lifestyle. For that grumbling, God’s punishment was DEATH:

*Death Sentence on the Rebels*

*“And the LORD spoke to Moses and Aaron, saying, **“How long shall I bear with this evil congregation who complain against Me? I have heard the complaints which the children of Israel make against Me. Say to them, ‘As I live,’ says the LORD, ‘just as you have spoken in My hearing, so I will do to you: The carcasses of you who have complained against Me shall fall in this wilderness, all of you who were numbered, according to your***

entire number, from twenty years old and above. Except for Caleb the son of Jephunneh and Joshua the son of Nun, you shall by no means enter the land which I swore I would make you dwell in. But your little ones, whom you said would be victims, I will bring in, and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your carcasses shall fall in this wilderness. And your sons shall be shepherds in the wilderness forty years, and bear the brunt of your infidelity, until your carcasses are consumed in the wilderness. According to the number of the days in which you spied out the land, forty days, for each day you shall bear your guilt one year, namely forty years, and you shall know My rejection. I the LORD have spoken this. I will surely do so to all this evil congregation who are gathered together against Me. In this wilderness they shall be consumed, and there they shall die.”

“Now the men whom Moses sent to spy out the land, who returned and made all the congregation complain against him by bringing a bad report of the land, those very men who brought the evil report about the land, died by the plague before the LORD. But Joshua the son of Nun and Caleb the son of Jephunneh remained alive, of the men who went to spy out the land.”  
[Numbers 14:26-38, Bible, NKJV]

Only when God’s people were obedient and all the old guard socialists had died off after 40 years in the desert did God see fit to allow the Israelites to enter the land of milk and honey. That land was symbolic of God’s blessings of obedience found in Deut. 28:15-68.

If you would like a more complete discussion of the subject of this section, see:

Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

### 3 Foundations of socialism

All collectivist philosophies, including socialism and communism, presuppose that all property is owned or at least controlled by the collective and that individual, PRIVATE ownership or the PRIVATE rights that make that ownership possible are non-existent. In support of the thesis of this section, we offer the following definitions of “socialism”:

“socialism *n* (1839) 1: any of various economic and political theories advocating collective or governmental ownership and administration of the means of production and distribution of goods 2 a: a system of society or group living in which there is no private property b: a system or condition of society in which the means of production are owned and controlled by the state 3: a stage of society in Marxist theory transitional between capitalism and communism and distinguished by unequal distribution of goods and pay according to work done.”  
[Webster’s Ninth New Collegiate Dictionary, 1983, ISBN 0-87779-510-X, p. 1118]

“Socialism, reduced to its simplest legal and practical expression, means the complete discarding of the institution of private property by transforming it into public property and the division of the resultant income equally and indiscriminately among the entire population.”  
[George Bernard Shaw, Encyclopedia Britannica, 1946 ed., Vol. 20, P. 895]

When socialism began to take its roots in the 1930’s under Franklin Delano Roosevelt (FDR), gold and silver had to be outlawed so that money could transform from a physical commodity that you could own by having physical possession of into a piece of fiat paper. The value of the fiat paper was then regulated by making human labor into surety for its value through the individual income tax. The reasoning behind the outlawing of gold was explained during debates about the bill that outlawed gold as follows:

“The ultimate ownership of all property is in the State; individual so-called “ownership” is only by virtue of Government, i.e., law, amounting to mere user; and use must be in accordance with law and subordinate to the necessities of the State.”  
[Senate Document #43, Senate Resolution No. 62, p. 9, paragraph 2, 1933  
SOURCE: <http://www.famguardian.org/Subjects/MoneyBanking/History/SenateDoc43.pdf>]

So the central tenet of socialism is government ownership and control of all property and transforming all private property into public property. Now let’s analyze whether that condition exists in American Society and to what extent it exists. In the United States, all property owned or controlled by the government is called any of the following:

1. Property devoted to the “public interest”:



1           *"Public interest. Something in which the public, the community at large, has some pecuniary interest, or some*  
2 *interest by which their legal rights or liabilities are affected. It does not mean anything so narrow as mere*  
3 *curiosity, or as the interests of the particular localities, which may be affected by the matters in question.*  
4 *Interest shared by citizens generally in affairs of local, state or national government. Russell v. Wheeler, 165*  
5 *Colo. 296, 439 P.2d. 43, 46.*

6           *If by public permission one is making use of public property and he chances to be the only one with whom the*  
7 *public can deal with respect to the use of that property, his business is affected with a public interest which*  
8 *requires him to deal with the public on reasonable terms. The circumstances which clothe a particular kind of*  
9 *business with a "public interest," as to be subject to regulation, must be such as to create a peculiarly close*  
10 *relation between the public and those engaged in it and raise implications of an affirmative obligation on their*  
11 *part to be reasonable in dealing with the public. One does not devote his property or business to a public use,*  
12 *or clothe it with a public interest, merely because he makes commodities for and sells to the public in common*  
13 *callings such as those of the butcher, baker, tailor, etc. Chas. Wolff Packing Co. v. Court of Industrial*  
14 *Relations of State of Kansas, 262 U.S. 522, 43 S.Ct. 630, 633, 67 L.Ed. 1103. A business is not affected with a*  
15 *public interest merely because it is large, or because the public has concern in respect of its maintenance, or*  
16 *derives benefit, accommodation, ease, or enjoyment from it. Tyson & Bro.-United Theatre Ticket Offices v.*  
17 *Banton, 273 U.S. 418, 47 S.Ct. 426, 71 L.Ed. 718.*  
18 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1229]*

## 19   2.   Property devoted to a "public purpose"

20           *"**Public purpose.** In the law of taxation, eminent domain, etc., this is a term of classification to distinguish the*  
21 *objects for which, according to settled usage, the government is to provide, from those which, by the like usage,*  
22 *are left to private interest, inclination, or liberality. The constitutional requirement that the purpose of any tax,*  
23 *police regulation, or particular exertion of the power of eminent domain shall be the convenience, safety, or*  
24 *welfare of the entire community and not the welfare of a specific individual or class of persons [such as, for*  
25 *instance, federal benefit recipients as individuals]. "Public purpose" that will justify expenditure of public*  
26 *money generally means such an activity as will serve as benefit to community as a body and which at same time*  
27 *is directly related function of government. Pack v. Southwestern Bell Tel. & Tel. Co., 215 Tenn. 503, 387*  
28 *S.W.2d. 789, 794.*

29           *The term is synonymous with governmental purpose. As employed to denote the objects for which taxes may be*  
30 *levied, it has no relation to the urgency of the public need or to the extent of the public benefit which is to*  
31 *follow; the essential requisite being that a public service or use shall affect the inhabitants as a community,*  
32 *and not merely as individuals. A public purpose or public business has for its objective the promotion of the*  
33 *public health, safety, morals, general welfare, security, prosperity, and contentment of all the inhabitants or*  
34 *residents within a given political division, as, for example, a state, the sovereign powers of which are exercised*  
35 *to promote such public purpose or public business."*  
36 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1231, Emphasis added]*

## 37   3.   Property devoted to "public use":

38           ***Public use.** Eminent domain. The constitutional and statutory basis for taking property by eminent domain.*  
39 *For condemnation purposes, "public use" is one which confers some benefit or advantage to the public; it is not*  
40 *confined to actual use by public. It is measured in terms of right of public to use proposed facilities for which*  
41 *condemnation is sought and, as long as public has right of use, whether exercised by one or many members of*  
42 *public, a "public advantage" or "public benefit" accrues sufficient to constitute a public use. Montana Power*  
43 *Co. v. Bokma, Mont., 457 P.2d. 769, 772, 773.*

44           *Public use, in constitutional provisions restricting the exercise of the right to take property in virtue of eminent*  
45 *domain, means a use concerning the whole community distinguished from particular individuals. But each and*  
46 *every member of society need not be equally interested in such use, or be personally and directly affected by it;*  
47 *if the object is to satisfy a great public want or exigency, that is sufficient. Ringe Co. v. Los Angeles County, 262*  
48 *U.S. 700, 43 S.Ct. 689, 692, 67 L.Ed. 1186. The term may be said to mean public usefulness, utility, or*  
49 *advantage, or what is productive of general benefit. It may be limited to the inhabitants of a small or restricted*  
50 *locality, but must be in common, and not for a particular individual. The use must be a needful one for the*  
51 *public, which cannot be surrendered without obvious general loss and inconvenience. A "public use" for which*  
52 *land may be taken defies absolute definition for it changes with varying conditions of society, new appliances in*  
53 *the sciences, changing conceptions of scope and functions of government, and other differing circumstances*  
54 *brought about by an increase in population and new modes of communication and transportation. Katz v.*  
55 *Brandon, 156 Conn. 521, 245 A.2d. 579, 586.*

56           *See also Condemnation; Eminent domain.*  
57 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1232]*

58   So in order to see the extent of socialism in America, we need to examine the extent to which property is devoted to a  
59   "public use" or a "public purpose", both in the law and in the ownership records of the property as well.

Next, we must examine the nature of those who devote their time and labor to a “public purpose” and how they do this. A person who manages “public property” or property devoted to a “public use” is referred to as a person who is exercising a “public office”. Below is the definition of this term:

*Public office.* Essential characteristics of “public office” are: (1) authority conferred by law, (2) fixed tenure of office, and (3) power to exercise some portion of the sovereign functions of government; key element of such test is that “officer” is carrying out sovereign function. *Spring v. Constantino*, 168 Conn. 563, 362 A.2d. 871, 875. Essential elements to establish public position as “public office” are: position must be created by constitution, legislature, or through authority conferred by legislature, portion of sovereign power of government must be delegated to position, duties and powers must be defined, directly or impliedly, by legislature or through legislative authority, duties must be performed independently without control of superior power other than law, and position must have some permanency and continuity. *State ex rel. Eli Lilly and Co. v. Gaertner*, Mo.App., 619 S.W.2d. 761, 764.  
[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 1230]

The U.S. Supreme Court also defined what a “public office” is in the case of *Osborn v. United States*, 22 U.S. 738 (1824):

**“All the powers of the government must be carried into operation by individual agency, either through the medium of public officers, or contracts made with individuals.** Can any public office be created, or does one exist, the performance of which may, with propriety, be assigned to this association [or trust], when incorporated? If such office exist, or can be created, then the company may be incorporated, that they may be appointed to execute such office. Is there any portion of the public business performed by individuals upon contracts, that this association could be employed to perform, with greater advantage and more safety to the public, than an individual contractor? If there be an employment of this nature, then may this company be incorporated to undertake it.

**There is an employment of this nature.** Nothing can be more essential to the fiscal concerns of the nation, than an agent of undoubted integrity and established credit, with whom the public moneys can, at all times, be safely deposited. Nothing can be of more importance to a government, than that there should be some capitalist in the country, who possesses the means of making advances of money to the government upon any exigency, and who is under a legal obligation to make such advances. For these purposes the association would be an agent peculiarly suitable and appropriate. [. . .]

The mere creation of a corporation, does not confer political power or political character. So this Court decided in *Dartmouth College v. Woodward*, already referred to. If I may be allowed to paraphrase the language of the Chief Justice, I would say, a bank incorporated, is no more a State instrument, than a natural person performing the same business would be. If, then, a natural person, engaged in the trade of banking, should contract with the government to receive the public money upon deposit, to transmit it from place to place, without charging for commission or difference of exchange, and to perform, when called upon, the duties of commissioner of loans, would not thereby become a public officer, how is it that this artificial being, created by law for the purpose of being employed by the government for the same purposes, should become a part of the civil government of the country? Is it because its existence, its capacities, its powers, are given by law? because the government has given it power to take and hold property in a particular form, and to employ that property for particular purposes, and in the disposition of it to use a particular name? because the government has sold it a privilege [22 U.S. 738, 774] for a large sum of money, and has bargained with it to do certain things; is it, therefore, a part of the very government with which the contract is made?

**If the Bank be constituted a public office, by the connexion between it and the government, it cannot be the mere legal franchise in which the office is vested; the individual stockholders must be the officers.** Their character is not merged in the charter. This is the strong point of the *Mayor and Commonalty v. Wood*, upon which this Court ground their decision in the *Bank v. Deveaux*, and from which they say, that cause could not be distinguished. Thus, aliens may become public officers, and public duties are confided to those who owe no allegiance to the government, and who are even beyond its territorial limits.

**With the privileges and perquisites of office, all individuals holding offices, ought to be subject to the disabilities of office. But if the Bank be a public office, and the individual stockholders public officers, this principle does not have a fair and just operation.** The disabilities of office do not attach to the stockholders; for we find them every where holding public offices, even in the national Legislature, from which, if they be public officers, they are excluded by the constitution in express terms.

**If the Bank be a public institution of such character as to be justly assimilated to the mint and the post office, then its charter may be amended, altered, or even abolished, at the discretion of the National Legislature. All public offices are created [22 U.S. 738, 775] purely for public purposes, and may, at any time, be modified in such manner as the public interest may require. Public corporations partake of the same character. So it is distinctly adjudged in *Dartmouth College v. Woodward*. In this point, each Judge who delivered an opinion concurred. By one of the Judges it is said, that ‘public corporations are generally esteemed such as exist for public political purposes only, such as towns, cities, parishes and counties; and in many respects they are so, although they involve some private interests; but, strictly speaking, public corporations are such only as are**

1 *founded by the government for public purposes, where the whole interest belongs also to the government. If,*  
2 *therefore, the foundation be private, though under the charter of the government, the corporation is private,*  
3 *however extensive the uses may be to which it is devoted, either by the bounty of the founder, or the nature*  
4 *and objects of the institution. For instance, a bank, created by the government for its own uses, whose stock*  
5 *is exclusively owned by the government, is, in the strictest sense, a public corporation. So, a hospital created*  
6 *and endowed by the government for general charity. But a bank, whose stock is owned by private persons, is*  
7 *a private corporation, although it is erected by the government, and its objects and operations partake of a*  
8 *public nature. The same doctrine may be affirmed of insurance, canal, bridge, and turnpike companies. In*  
9 *all these cases, the uses may, in a certain sense, be called public, but the corporations are private; as much*  
10 *[22 U.S. 738, 776] so, indeed, as if the franchises were vested in a single person.[ . . ]*

11 *In what sense is it an instrument of the government? and in what character is it employed as such? Do the*  
12 *government employ the faculty, the legal franchise, or do they employ the individuals upon whom it is*  
13 *conferred? and what is the nature of that employment? does it resemble the post office, or the mint, or the*  
14 *custom house, or the process of the federal Courts?*

15 *The post office is established by the general government. It is a public institution. The persons who perform its*  
16 *duties are public officers. No individual has, or can acquire, any property in it. For all the services performed,*  
17 *a compensation is paid out of the national treasury; and all the money received upon account of its operations,*  
18 *is public property. Surely there is no similitude between this institution, and an association who trade upon*  
19 *their own capital, for their own profit, and who have paid the government a million and a half of dollars for a*  
20 *legal character and name, in which to conduct their trade.*

21 *Again: the business conducted through the agency of the post office, is not in its nature a private business. It is*  
22 *of a public character, and the [22 U.S. 738, 786] charge of it is expressly conferred upon Congress by the*  
23 *constitution. The business is created by law, and is annihilated when the law is repealed. But the trade of*  
24 *banking is strictly a private concern. It exists and can be carried on without the aid of the national Legislature.*  
25 *Nay, it is only under very special circumstances, that the national Legislature can so far interfere with it, as to*  
26 *facilitate its operations.*

27 *The post office executes the various duties assigned to it, by means of subordinate agents. The mails are opened*  
28 *and closed by persons invested with the character of public officers. But they are transported by individuals*  
29 *employed for that purpose, in their individual character, which employment is created by and founded in*  
30 *contract. To such contractors no official character is attached. These contractors supply horses, carriages, and*  
31 *whatever else is necessary for the transportation of the mails, upon their own account. The whole is engaged in*  
32 *the public service. The contractor, his horses, his carriage, his driver, are all in public employ. But this does*  
33 *not change their character. All that was private property before the contract was made, and before they were*  
34 *engaged in public employ, remain private property still. The horses and the carriages are liable to be taxed as*  
35 *other property, for every purpose for which property of the same character is taxed in the place where they are*  
36 *employed. The reason is plain: the contractor is employing his own means to promote his own private profit,*  
37 *and the tax collected is from the individual, though assessed upon the [22 U.S. 738, 787] means he uses to*  
38 *perform the public service. To tax the transportation of the mails, as such, would be taxing the operations of the*  
39 *government, which could not be allowed. But to tax the means by which this transportation is effected, so far as*  
40 *those means are private property, is allowable; because it abstracts nothing from the government; and because,*  
41 *the fact that an individual employs his private means in the service of the government, attaches to them no*  
42 *immunity whatever."*  
43 *[Osborn v. Bank of U.S., 22 U.S. 738 (1824)]*

44 Based on the foregoing, a person who manages property devoted to a public use holds a "public office". A "public office"  
45 is a type of government employment which is created by the authority of law. In the United States, all public employees  
46 are required to take an oath, under [5 U.S.C. §3331](#):

47 [TITLE 5 > PART III > Subpart B > CHAPTER 33 > SUBCHAPTER II > § 3331](#)  
48 [§3331. Oath of office](#)

49 *An individual, except the President, elected or appointed to an office of honor or profit in the civil service or*  
50 *uniformed services, shall take the following oath: "I, AB, do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will support and*  
51 *defend the Constitution of the United States against all enemies, foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith*  
52 *and allegiance to the same; that I take this obligation freely, without any mental reservation or purpose of*  
53 *evasion; and that I will well and faithfully discharge the duties of the office on which I am about to enter. So*  
54 *help me God."* This section does not affect other oaths required by law.

55 The oath taken by public employees or "public officers" creates a "fiduciary duty" as a "trustee" over the "public trust".  
56 President Bush said in his Executive order on this subject:

57 *Code of Ethics for Government Employees*  
58 *Public Law 96-303.*  
59 *Passed June 27, 1980 unanimously by Congress.*

Signed into law July 3, 1980 by President.

I. Put loyalty to the highest moral principles and to country above loyalty to persons, party, or Government department.

II. Uphold the Constitution, laws, and regulations of the United States and of all governments therein and never be a party to their evasion.

III. Give a full day's labor for a full day's pay; giving earnest effort and best thought to the performance of duties.

IV. Seek to find and employ more efficient and economical ways of getting tasks done.

V. Never discriminate unfairly by the dispensing of special favors or privileges to anyone, whether for remuneration or not; and never accept, for himself or herself or for family members, favors or benefits under circumstances which might be construed by reasonable persons as influencing the performance of governmental duties.

VI. Make no private promises of any kind binding upon the duties of office, since a Government employee has no private word which can be binding on public duty.

VII. Engage in no business with the Government, either directly or indirectly, which is inconsistent with the conscientious performance of governmental duties.

VIII. Never use any information gained confidentially in the performance of governmental duties as a means of making private profit.

IX. Expose corruption whenever discovered.

X. Uphold these principles, ever conscious that public office is a public trust.

Notice paragraph X above, which says: “*public office is a public trust*”. Those who act as government employees therefore function as “trustees” over the “public trust”. In law, holding the position of “trustee” creates what is called a “fiduciary duty”.

**“Fiduciary duty.** A duty to act for someone else’s benefit, while subordinating one’s personal interests to that of the other person. It is the highest standard of duty implied by law (e.g. trustee, guardian).”  
[Black’s Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 625]

Therefore, the oath of office for public officers creates a fiduciary duty. The purpose of all oaths is to voluntarily express and to create a duty of “allegiance” to some one or some thing. In this case, the oath creates a duty of allegiance to the “public”, who are the sovereigns in our system of government. Here is what the U.S. Supreme Court said on this subject:

**Juilliard v. Greenman, 110 U.S. 421 (1884):** “There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States...In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it. All else is withheld.”

**Hale v. Henkel, 201 U.S. 43 (1906):** “His [the individual’s] rights are such as existed by the law of the land long antecedent to the organization of the State, and can only be taken from him by due process of law, and in accordance with the Constitution. Among his rights are a refusal to incriminate himself, and the immunity of himself and his property from arrest or seizure except under a warrant of the law. He owes nothing to the public so long as he does not trespass upon their rights.”

**Perry v. U.S., 294 U.S. 330 (1935):** “In the United States, sovereignty resides in the people...the Congress cannot invoke sovereign power of the People to override their will as thus declared.”

**Yick Wo v. Hopkins, 118 U.S. 356 (1886):** “Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to law, for it is the author and source of law...While sovereign powers are delegated to...the government, sovereignty itself remains with the people.”

That allegiance of public officers expresses itself as a type of “fiduciary relation”:

**Fiduciary or confidential relation.** A very broad term embracing both technical and fiduciary relations and those informal relations which exist wherever one person trusts in or relies upon another. One founded on trust

or confidence reposed by one person in the integrity and fidelity of another. Such relationship arises whenever confidence is reposed on one side, and domination and influence result on the other; the relation can be legal, social, domestic, or merely personal. *Heilman's Estate, Matter of*, 37 Ill.App.3d. 390, 345 N.E.2d. 536, 540.

A relation subsisting between two persons in regard to a business, contract, or piece of property, or in regard to the general business or estate of one of them, of such a character that each must repose trust and confidence in the other and must exercise a corresponding degree of fairness and good faith. Out of such a relation, the law raises the rule that neither party may exert influence or pressure upon the other, take selfish advantage of his trust, or deal with the subject-matter of the trust in such a way as to benefit himself or prejudice the other except in the exercise of the utmost good faith and with the full knowledge and consent of that other, business shrewdness, hard bargaining, and astuteness to take advantage of the forgetfulness or negligence of another being totally prohibited as between persons standing in such a relation to each other. Examples of fiduciary relations are those existing between attorney and client, guardian and ward, principal and agent, executor and heir, trustee and cestui que trust, landlord and tenant, etc.  
[*Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 625*]

The fiduciary duty of public employees is what creates the affirmative obligation to do certain things for or on behalf of the public. When these employment obligations are not satisfied, then the trustee or “public officer” becomes personally liable for the harm caused by that omission. That liability is defined under his employment contract, which in the case of federal employees is found in Title 5 of the U.S. Code and Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A. The creation and existence of fiduciary duty is the only lawful way whereby persons can be prosecuted for NOT doing something. Every other type of crime under any state or federal penal or criminal code can only describe a punishment for things that are done. There is no lawful way to make it a crime to NOT do something without the existence of fiduciary duty or a contractual obligation of some kind.

The Supreme Court helped clarify what happens when a man devotes his property to a “public use”, when it said:

“Surely the matters in which the public has the most interest are the supplies of food and clothing; yet can it be that by reason of this interest the state may fix the price at which the butcher must sell his meat, or the vendor of boots and shoes his goods? Men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, -life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; and to 'secure,' not grant or create, these rights, governments are instituted. That property which a man has honestly acquired he retains full control of, subject to these limitations: First, that he shall not use it to his neighbor's injury, and that does not mean that he must use it for his neighbor's benefit; second, that if he devotes it to a public use, he gives to the public a right to control that use; and third, that whenever the public needs require, the public may take it upon payment of due compensation.”  
[*Budd v. People of State of New York*, 143 U.S. 517 (1892)]

Notice the rules they defined for using “private property” and converting of private property into “public property”, which we summarize below:

1. People retain full and exclusive control over their private property at all times, subject to the exceptions below.
2. No person may use his property to hurt his neighbor. If he does hurt his neighbor, he must assume legal liability to compensate his neighbor for any injury he inflicts.
3. No person may be compelled by the state to use his property to help or benefit his neighbor. This implies that the government has no authority to compel anyone to participate in any social welfare program or insurance program, including Social Security, Medicare, FICA, or any other government program. All monies paid into these programs are immediately paid right back out to someone else, and are not returned directly to the person who paid them.
4. If a person devotes his private property to a public use, he gives the public the right to control that use.
5. Whenever the public needs require, the public may take it only upon payment of due compensation. This is a requirement of the Fifth Amendment to the United States Constitution.

Next, we must look at how the government identifies those who are its “employees” or “personnel”. It turns out that the Social Security Number, in fact, is the vehicle used to establish whether a person is acting as a federal “employee”. 20 C.F.R. §422.104 says that Social Security Numbers can only be issued to federal “employees”:

Title 20: Employees' Benefits  
[PART 422—ORGANIZATION AND PROCEDURES](#)  
[Subpart B—General Procedures](#)  
§ 422.104 Who can be assigned a social security number.

(a) Persons eligible for SSN assignment. We can assign you a social security number if you meet the evidence requirements in §422.107 and you are:



(1) A United States citizen; or

(2) An alien lawfully admitted to the United States for permanent residence or under other authority of law permitting you to work in the United States (§422.105 describes how we determine if a nonimmigrant alien is permitted to work in the United States); or

(3) An alien who cannot provide evidence of alien status showing lawful admission to the U.S., or an alien with evidence of lawful admission but without authority to work in the U.S., if the evidence described in §422.107(e) does not exist, but only for a valid nonwork reason. We consider you to have a valid nonwork reason if:

(i) You need a social security number to satisfy a Federal statute or regulation that requires you to have a social security number in order to receive a Federally-funded benefit to which you have otherwise established entitlement and you reside either in or outside the U.S.; or

(ii) You need a social security number to satisfy a State or local law that requires you to have a social security number in order to receive public assistance benefits to which you have otherwise established entitlement, and you are legally in the United States.

Notice that the above regulation has the following requirements for the issuance of Social Security Numbers:

1. Person must be a statutory but not constitutional “U.S. citizen” pursuant to 8 U.S.C. §1401 or a lawful permanent “resident”. What both of these statuses have in common is a “domicile” within the District of Columbia and not in a state of the Union.
2. The person must be a federal “employee”. Note that the regulation falls under 20 CFR, which is entitled “Employee’s Benefits”. Those who are not federal “employees” may not be issued a Social Security Number. The Privacy Act, 5 U.S.C. §552a(a)(13) confirms that all those either receiving or entitled to receive any deferred federal benefit are “federal personnel”:

[TITLE 5 > PART 1 > CHAPTER 5 > SUBCHAPTER II > § 552a](#)  
[§ 552a. Records maintained on individuals](#)

(a) Definitions.— For purposes of this section—

(13) the term “Federal personnel” means officers and employees of the Government of the United States, members of the uniformed services (including members of the Reserve Components), individuals entitled to receive immediate or deferred retirement benefits under any retirement program of the Government of the United States (including survivor benefits).

The regulations governing federal employees also confirm that the Social Security Number and card are the property of the United States government, and NOT the person who it was issued to:

Title 20: Employees' Benefits  
[PART 422—ORGANIZATION AND PROCEDURES](#)  
[Subpart B—General Procedures](#)  
[§ 422.103 Social security numbers.](#)

(d) Social security number cards.

A person who is assigned a social security number will receive a social security number card from SSA within a reasonable time after the number has been assigned. (See §422.104 regarding the assignment of social security number cards to aliens.) **Social security number cards are the property of SSA and must be returned upon request.**

Therefore, the number issued to you is not YOUR number. It is “public property” in your temporary custody. The only people who can hold or use public property are federal “employees” on official government business. It is a crime to use public property for a “private use”. That, in fact, is what the Code of Ethics said above for federal employees, now isn’t it? Consequently:

1. Anything you put the Social Security Number on becomes private property devoted to a “public purpose”.
2. Those who manage property devoted to a “public use” give the right to the public to control that use, according to the U.S. Supreme Court. That use is controlled through Title 42 of the U.S. Code and Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A.

3. You, as the only person who have control over this property which has been devoted to a “public use” become a “public officer” in the context of the management of that property.
4. The only way you can remove the property from the status being “public property” is to remove the number from being associated with it.

Based on the foregoing analysis, we have therefore arrived at a means to measure the extent of socialism within the American economy. Socialism is measured by:

1. The number of people who have and use Social Security Numbers in the management and control of their property, including both real and financial property. Everyone who uses such a number is a federal “employee” acting in their official capacity as “public officers”.
2. The tax rate that people are paying on their earnings from labor. A person who pays 40% tax on their earnings basically has devoted his labor, which is property, to “public use” for 40% of the year. He in effect is a voluntary federal “employee” for the first 4.8 months of the year. Here is what the U.S. Supreme Court said about the authority of the government to tax the labor of a human being. Therefore, you must have volunteered to be a federal “employee”, because they can’t force you to, now can they?

*“Every man has a natural right to the fruits of his own labor, is generally admitted; and **no other person can rightfully deprive him of those fruits, and appropriate them against his will...**”*  
[The Antelope, 23 U.S. 66, 10 Wheat 66, 6 L.Ed. 268 (1825)]

3. The extent to which people in society are exercising the duties of a “public office”. Nearly all liabilities a person can have under the Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A, arise from use of private property in connection with a “trade or business”, which is defined in 26 U.S.C. §7701(a)(26) as “the functions of a public office”. For details, see:

*The “Trade or Business” Scam*, Form #05.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

4. The number of people who are acting as government “employees” of one kind or another. Nearly every liability a person can have under Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A arises exclusively from one’s status as a federal “employee”. For details, see:

*Why Your Government is Either a Thief or You are a “Public Officer” for Income Tax Purposes*, Form #05.008  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

5. The extent of regulation of people’s private lives. People ordinarily can only be subject to government regulation to the extent to which they devote their private lives and private property to a “public use”. Otherwise, they are free to use their property, which includes their labor, their families, and their real property, however they choose.
6. The amount of land and chattel property which is under the control or ownership of the government.

This is getting pretty interesting, now isn’t it? There is a whole invisible world of things that you never even thought about that are going on right in front of your eyes, if you would just start reading the law and watching what your government is doing, now isn’t there? Do you think your government wants you to know about this? Does the “servant” want the “master” to know who is boss?

## **4 Charles Ponzi, A.K.A. Uncle Sam<sup>1</sup>**

Carlo "Charles" Ponzi was a con man who was the Bernie Madoff of his era. For two years, 1918 to 1920, he sold an impossible dream: a scheme to earn investors 50% profit in 45 days. He paid off old investors with money generated from new investors. The scheme has been imitated ever since.

Every Ponzi scheme involves five elements:

1. A promise of statistically impossible high returns
2. An investment story that makes no sense economically
3. Greedy investors who want something for nothing
4. A willing suspension of disbelief by investors
5. Investors' angry rejection of exposures by investigators

<sup>1</sup> Adapted from: *Carlo Ponzi, A.K.A. Uncle Sam*, Gary North, <http://www.garynorth.com/public/10280.cfm>.

1 Strangely, most Ponzi schemes involve a sixth element: the unwillingness of the con man to quit and flee when he still can.  
2 Bernie Madoff is the supreme example. But Ponzi himself established the tradition.

3 The scheme, once begun, moves toward its statistically inevitable end. From the day it is conceived, it is doomed. Yet even  
4 the con man who conceived it believes that he can make it work one more year, or month, or day. The scheme's designer is  
5 trapped by his own rhetoric. He becomes addicted to his own lies. He does not take the money and run.

6 This leads me to a set of conclusions. Because all Ponzi schemes involve statistically impossible goals, widespread greed,  
7 suspension of disbelief, and resistance to public exposure,

- 8 1. All fractional reserve banking is a Ponzi scheme.
- 9 2. All central banking is a Ponzi scheme.
- 10 3. All government retirement programs are Ponzi schemes.
- 11 4. All government-funded medicine is a Ponzi scheme.
- 12 5. All empires are Ponzi schemes.
- 13 6. All Keynesian economics is a Ponzi scheme.

14 But there is a difference between a private Ponzi scheme and a government Ponzi scheme. The private scheme relies on  
15 deception and greed alone. A government Ponzi scheme relies on deception, greed, badges, and guns.

## 16 **4.1 Social Security**

17 Political liberals in the mainstream media get very upset when somebody speaks of the sacred cow of Social Security as a  
18 Ponzi scheme. They go gunning for any political figure who uses the phrase "Ponzi scheme" in relation to Social Security.  
19 This is because they know that such a politician is a conservative, and they want to see him defeated at the next election.

20 It doesn't matter whether politicians say the naughty words or not; the Social Security system is a Ponzi scheme, and it will  
21 go bust.

22 Medicare is a vastly larger Ponzi scheme, and it, too, will go bust. In fact, it will go bust with such an impact on the federal  
23 budget that it will pull down the Social Security system with it. In fact, if the promises are not broken to the oldsters who  
24 are dependent upon Medicare and Social Security, the deficits in the Medicare system will bring down the entire federal  
25 government. The government will default on all of its debts. Anybody who bought that debt will then wind up as helpless  
26 as the people who have become dependent upon Social Security and Medicare.

27 The people who are dependent upon Social Security don't want to hear this. They want to tell us that they paid into the  
28 system, fair and square, and therefore we owe them the money. Well, I am in the system, and I paid into the system, and I'm  
29 going to cash my checks from the system, but I will be glad when the system goes belly up.

## 30 **4.2 Ethical cause and effect**

31 Why should the thought of the bankruptcy of these Ponzi schemes cheer me up? Because I believe in ethics. I am horrified  
32 by the thought of a completely unethical system being successful over time. The longer the day of reckoning is delayed, the  
33 more people will be lured into it. I wish the system would go belly up sooner than later, because fewer people will become  
34 dependent on it if the system goes belly up sooner rather than later.

35 Sadly, the people who believe that it is ethical to stick a gun in the belly of one man and take his money, in order to support  
36 someone else, are in favor of the Social Security system. They want it to keep going forever. They want the moral  
37 corruption of coercion to continue.

38 The initial motivation for sticking the gun in a man's belly was political rather than charitable. Chancellor Otto von  
39 Bismarck in the 1880s rammed the first old age retirement program down the throats of German politicians because he  
40 knew that this would undercut the liberals, which it did. The reasons were not based on charity. The reasons were political.  
41 They were justified by arguments favoring state-funded charity, but it was all a con job, as all Ponzi schemes are.

1 But Social Security is vastly more corrupt than a Ponzi scheme, because a Ponzi scheme involves no coercion and a lie,  
2 whereas Social Security involves massive coercion and a much bigger lie. I will shed no tears when the system goes down.

3 The theologian C. S. Lewis once described as totally evil a world in which food would make people hungry. In other words,  
4 food would have the same kind of addictive power as heroin. The more you eat, the more you want. This is what Social  
5 Security and Medicare do. These systems are addictive, and the longer they operate, the larger the number of people who  
6 become addicted to them. The more you are dependent on the system, the more dependent you will become on the system.  
7 The weaker you get because you are dependent on the system, the more you are dependent on the system. This is the  
8 equivalent of Lewis's food that makes people hungry.

### 9 **4.3 A political revolt**

10 Because the Social Security system, like the Medicare system and Medicaid, has the characteristic of addiction, politicians  
11 cannot break it. Neither can the people who are dependent on the programs. Inevitably, the systems will continue to grow  
12 until such time as they threaten the bankruptcy of the entire government. At that point, there will be a political revolt.  
13 Younger people, meaning voters who are paying into the system, will send people to Congress specifically to cut the  
14 spending on the three Ponzi schemes. They will make it clear to elected representatives that if they do not find ways to cut  
15 spending, they will not be re-elected. Politicians will get the message.

16 The first people to be cut will be physicians. The government will cut payments to hospitals and physicians. This will create  
17 a shortage of medical care. The lines to get treatment will get longer. The quality of the care will be reduced. But, at some  
18 point, the government will have to find other ways to cut the expenditures. It will be political criteria that decide exactly  
19 how the various programs will be cut. But they will be cut.

20 One of the most amusing phrases that we hear today about the evils of Social Security is this one: "We are placing a burden  
21 on our children." This slogan is so nonsensical that I find it difficult to believe that anyone could believe it.

22 First, we are not placing a burden on our children. We are placing a burden on ourselves. The government is borrowing  
23 money to pay for the systems. We are therefore raising our level of indebtedness. Our children are not going to be burdened  
24 with this; we are going to be burdened with it when the kids get smart enough to pull the plug. They are going to stiff the  
25 creditors who have bought Treasury bonds and Treasury bills, and that means the banks that have bought them, the money  
26 market funds which have bought them, the retirement funds which have bought them, and anyone else who has bought  
27 them, including the Chinese central bank, the Japanese central bank, and the other central banks of the world.

28 Of course, the other central banks will be playing the same game, and all the other voting blocs in foreign nations will be  
29 moving against the geezers. Around the world, the same Ponzi system is in operation, and around the world they are all  
30 going bankrupt. There is not one of them that will survive. So, it will be a question of who pulls the plug first. Who stiffes  
31 the creditors first?

32 Congressmen hear the phrase about the immorality of burdening our children and grandchildren, and they know that the  
33 phrase is nothing but political hype. If they really tried to cut spending on the Ponzi schemes, and justified this by the fact  
34 that they were doing something effective to keep from stealing from children and grandchildren, they would be out of office  
35 after the next election. It's all crocodile tears. The geezers want the money, and they don't give a hoot about the children and  
36 grandchildren. They're going to get their checks, one way or the other, by hook or by crook they will stick their hooks into  
37 Congress, and Congress will do their work for them.

38 We can't pass on any obligations to our children and grandchildren if our children and grandchildren will be in a position to  
39 reject the transfer. There is nothing legally that compels our children and grandchildren to continue to pay into the system.  
40 We can scream bloody murder about how we paid in, and how the kids owe us, and how we are going to make certain that  
41 the kids fork over the money, but the kids already have the votes.

42 Here are the reasons why the kids don't simply pull the plug now. First, the kids want to pretend that somebody else is  
43 going to pay for their parents, especially the parents who are in retirement homes, or need costly medical care. The Ponzi  
44 schemes seem like good ideas, because those voters who think that somebody else is going to pick up the tab are willing to  
45 increase the tab. They still think that somebody else is going to pay for the free lunch of Social Security and Medicare.

1 The next reason why they pay is that the government threatens to send out IRS agents to compel them to pay. They're afraid  
2 of dealing with IRS agents who carry guns. They don't want to go to jail. They don't want to be fined. So, they keep paying  
3 into the system, because they think they have no choice but to stay in the system.

4 Third, they have the illusion, which a lot of them are losing, that someday they will be the beneficiaries of the system. But  
5 it is getting clearer to larger numbers of them that this is not going to be the case.

6 So, when the day finally comes when the burden of paying into the system is greater than the expected benefits to be  
7 received, younger voters are going to instruct Congress to pull the plug. There is no way around this statistically. The  
8 present value of the unfunded liabilities of Social Security, Medicare, and Medicaid is \$222 trillion. There is no way that  
9 this is ever going to be paid off. It is statistically impossible for the government to continue to pay off the systems.

10 There will be great weeping and gnashing of teeth when the plug gets pulled. The Gray Panthers will be outraged. The  
11 American Association of Retired Persons (AARP) will organize campaigns to get the geezers' noses back into the trough.  
12 But, ultimately, there are more young voters than old voters, and the young voters will ultimately vote their economic self-  
13 interest. They're going to pull the plug.

#### 14 **4.4 Blind men bluffed**

15 Why can't people see this? They cannot see this because it is not in their immediate self-interest to see it. They are like  
16 northern European bankers who loaned the money to the spendthrift socialists in the sunny climate of the Mediterranean,  
17 confident that the spendthrift socialists were not going to run up the tab and then default. They pretended that the Greeks  
18 were Germans. They pretended that the interest rate which they received by lending to the Greek government, which was  
19 only slightly above the interest rate they could receive by lending to the German government, was a reasonable deal. They  
20 poured hundreds of billions of dollars into that Club Med countries, oblivious to the fact that the socialist spendthrifts in the  
21 sunny climates had no intention of repaying.

22 Of course, no government has any intention of repaying. Every government just wants to run up the bill for another year.  
23 Every government wants to be able to make annual interest payments, and then run up the bill some more. Nobody expects  
24 any government ever to pay it all off. But, when dealing with the socialist spendthrifts of the sunny Mediterranean,  
25 Northern Europeans were dealing with really efficient spendthrifts. They were dealing with crooks of the highest order.  
26 They were dealing with profligate governments that put to shame northern European governments. So, beginning in April  
27 of 2010, the bankers of the north have had to deal with the problem that they are not going to get repaid. They're not even to  
28 get their interest payments.

29 Why were they so stupid? It is clear now that they were stupid. Hard money advocates in the 1990s predicted exactly what  
30 was going to happen, and now it has happened. They predicted that the euro would begin to fall apart, because bankers in  
31 the north would lend money to private borrowers and government borrowers in southern Europe, a region which is not  
32 governed by the same ethical system that prevails in the north. The north is more future-oriented, thrifty, and concerned  
33 with the burden of debt. The sunshine socialists in the Mediterranean are concerned with none of these things. They believe  
34 that the north owes them a living, and they also believe, Keynesian style, that they can borrow their way into prosperity. So,  
35 that is what they did.

36 The bankers in northern Europe now are begging the governments of northern Europe to bail them out. The bankers do not  
37 wish to suffer the pain and embarrassment of sitting on top of hundreds of billions of dollars of bad debt issued by the  
38 sunshine socialists of the Mediterranean. They don't want to be embarrassed by the inevitable results of their own short-  
39 term policies. They were dummies, and now they want the voters to cover their losses, leaving them with just as much  
40 prosperity as before, leaving them in charge of the system in which most of the benefits go to the bankers, and most of the  
41 liabilities go to the voters. I mean, isn't that the bankers' way? You bet it is.

42 The bankers are involved in a Ponzi scheme. The Ponzi scheme involves accepting promises by the sunshine socialists of  
43 the Mediterranean that they would be able to make interest payments, because somehow, they would find ways to tax their  
44 people, or at least borrow more money to make the interest payments. The great Ponzi schemes of the Mediterranean world  
45 are ahead of the great Ponzi schemes of northern Europe. So, the northern Europeans, believing in Keynesian miracles,  
46 really have nothing much to say about the policies of southern Europe. Both regions pursue Keynesian policies, which  
47 means both regions pursue the economics of Charles Ponzi, the Italian American immigrant whose name is attached to this  
48 scheme which he first developed.



1 The entire Western world is one large Ponzi scheme. It is a Ponzi scheme, because it is based on the concept of debt issued  
2 by governments that will never be repaid, and future taxes imposed on voters who supposedly cannot escape, all in the  
3 name of the vast Ponzi scheme of the golden years of retirement funded by hard-working taxpayers in the next generation.

4 We are not imposing these burdens on the next generation, unless the next generation is dumber than dirt. The next  
5 generation is finally going to figure out that the Ponzi scheme is going to bankrupt them if they stay in it. So, they're going  
6 to pull out of it. There will be a political revolution in the thinking of voters, and when that day comes, they will tell the  
7 politicians to pull the plug on the geezers. This is exactly what the politicians will do.

8 That day should be a day of great rejoicing, precisely because it will be the day of reckoning for an immoral system based  
9 on badges and guns. It was an immoral system when it was imposed in 1935 by Franklin Roosevelt's New Deal, and it was  
10 an immoral system when it was invented in the 1880s by Otto von Bismarck. It is a Ponzi scheme, through and through,  
11 except that it is based on badges and guns rather than preposterous lies alone. Preposterous lies undergird both systems, but,  
12 as I have said, Ponzi never forced anybody into the system.

#### 13 **4.5 Deferring the Inevitable**

14 I favor the looming collapse of Social Security and Medicare, because I am in favor of predictability in ethical matters.  
15 Unethical acts are supposed to result in negative sanctions. If these sanctions are not imposed by the civil government, or  
16 by some other agency, then the sanctions will be imposed by basic accounting. One way or the other, negative sanctions  
17 will be imposed.

18 The problem with Social Security and Medicare is that the negative sanctions are not imposed on the beneficiaries, but are  
19 rather imposed on voters who think that they will become beneficiaries. The system is morally corrupt, but it also is  
20 tenacious. The moral corruption which underlies this then spreads throughout the society. It is seen as immoral to pull the  
21 plug. It is not immoral to pull the plug, but since the plug will not be pulled for ethical reasons, it will be pulled for actuarial  
22 reasons. It will be pulled because it is an impossibility, in the same sense that a Ponzi scheme is an impossibility.

23 You either do things for the right reasons, or else you do things because of your fear of the negative sanctions involved in  
24 doing the wrong things. But, one way or the other, you will stop doing the bad things at some point. The heroin addict may  
25 not give up his addiction in order to save his health, his family, or his reputation. But he gives it up when he cannot get  
26 enough money to continue the habit. One way the other, he gives it up. The only other way to give it up is to die.

27 If you don't want to give up heroin, despite the fact that you know it will kill you, you are thinking about as clearly as  
28 somebody who becomes dependent upon Social Security and Medicare. If you would tell the heroin addict that he has to  
29 quit, because his addiction is going to kill him, or bankrupt him, you are giving the person sound advice. But, in our culture,  
30 it is considered a breach of political etiquette to warn addicts of Social Security and Medicare that they are risking death by  
31 remaining dependent on the systems. When the plug gets pulled, they will be in a weak condition. They will not be in a  
32 position to go back to work to earn a living. Their children, who have been paying taxes into the system for decades, will  
33 have less capital to provide for them.

34 We are a nation of addicts, and we live in a civilization in which the residents of every Western industrial nation are  
35 addicts. We are addicted to Ponzi scheme economics. In every university, in every high school, it is considered bad form to  
36 talk about the economics of Social Security and Medicare. Despite the statistical inevitability of the bankruptcy of the  
37 systems, the victims of the system are not supposed to be warned about it.

38 We warn children about drugs. We warn children about obesity. We warn children about cigarettes. We warn children  
39 about sexual promiscuity. But we don't warn children about the inevitable bankruptcy of Social Security, Medicare, and  
40 Medicaid.

41 The teachers who do not sound the warnings also think that their retirement programs, coupled with Social Security and  
42 Medicare, will give them comfortable retirements. They don't want to believe that this isn't true, so they are not about to tell  
43 the students that it is not true. Think of these people as northern European bankers in 2009. In other words, they are dumber  
44 than dirt.

45 I don't know how old I will be when the plug gets pulled. I surely hope I live long enough to see the plug gets pulled. I  
46 think I will. I just don't know what kind of physical shape I am going to be in when the plug gets pulled.



I structure my life as well as I can, so as not to be dependent on Social Security and Medicare, because I know that the plug will be pulled on both Ponzi schemes. But the vast majority of Americans have yet to understand this. This is why there is still a market for the silly phrase, "We are burdening our children and grandchildren with an unbearable level of debt." No, we are not. Our children are not dumber than dirt. When the pain of paying into the system is greater than the pain of bringing granny back into the household, or converting a garage into a little room for her, the voters are going to tell Congress to pull the plug.

## 4.6 Conclusion

I don't care if American Association of Retired Persons (AARP) doesn't want to hear this. I don't care of the voters in southern Florida don't want to hear it. When the plug gets pulled, they will hear it. Sooner or later, they will hear it. I prefer sooner. They prefer later. Congress prefers later. But, sooner or later, they will hear it.

## 5 What causes socialism to take over a culture?

*"Don't steal. Your public servants hate competition."*

A logical question to ask is the following:

*"What causes socialism to take over a specific culture or civilization and how is it done?"*

The answer to that question is explained in a wonderful book on biblical law:

*The Bible provides, as the foundation law of a godly social order, the law of the tithe. To understand the full implication of the tithe, it is important to know that Biblical law has no property tax; the right to tax real property is implicitly denied to the state, because the state has no earth to tax. "The earth is the Lord's" (Ex. 9:29; Deut. 10: 14; Ps. 24: 1; I Cor. 10:26, etc.); therefore, only God can tax the earth. For the state to claim the right to tax the earth is for the state to make itself the god and creator of the earth, whereas the state is instead God's ministry of justice (Rom. 13: 1-8). For the state to enter into God's realm is to invite judgment.*

*The immunity of land from taxation by the state means liberty. A man then cannot be dispossessed of his land; every man has a basic security in his property. As Rand pointed out,*

*It was impossible to dispossess men of their inheritance under the law of the Lord as no taxes were levied against land. Regardless of a man's personal commitments he could not disinherit his family by being dispossessed of his land forever. Because the land is not the property of the state, nor is land a part of the state's jurisdiction, the state therefore has no right under God to levy taxes against God's earth. Moreover, for the state to claim as much as God, i.e., a tenth of a man's income, is a sign of apostasy and tyranny, according to I Samuel 8: 4-19. The modern state, of course, claims several tithes in taxes.<sup>2</sup>*

*The tithe is not a gift to God; it is God's tax for the use of the earth, which is at all points under God's law and jurisdiction. Only when the payment to the Lord exceeds ten percent is it called a gift and a "freewill offering" (Deut. 16:10,11; Ex. 36:3-7; Lev. 22:21, etc.).*

*The tithe was for centuries legally collected, i.e., the state provided the legal requirement that tithes be paid to the church. When Virginia repealed its law which made payment of the tithe mandatory, George Washington expressed his disapproval in a letter to George Mason, October 3, 1785. He believed, he said, in "making people pay toward the support of that which they profess."<sup>3</sup> From the 4th century on, civil governments began to require the tithe, because it was believed that a country could only deny God His tax at its peril. From the end of the 18th century, and especially in recent years, such laws have disappeared under the impact of atheistic and revolutionary movements. Instead of freeing men from an "oppressive" tax, the abolition of the tithe has opened the way for truly oppressive taxation by the state in order to assume the social responsibilities once maintained by tithe money. Basic social functions must be paid for. If they are not paid by a responsible, tithing Christian people, they will be paid for by a tyrant state which will use welfare and education as stepping-stones to totalitarian power.*

*The matter was ably summed up by Lansdell:*

<sup>2</sup> Howard B. Rand, *Digest of the Divine Law* (Merrimac, Mass.: Destiny Publishers, 1943, 1959), p. 111.

<sup>3</sup> Jared Sparks, ed., *The Writings of George Washington* (Boston: Ferdinand Andrews, 1838), IX, 137.

1                   It seems clear, then, in the light of revelation, and from the practice of, perhaps, all  
2                   ancient nations, that the man who denies God's claim to a portion of the wealth that  
3                   comes to his hands, is much akin to a spiritual anarchist; whilst he who so apportions  
4                   less than a tenth of his income or increase is condemned by Scripture as a robber.  
5                   Indeed, if in the days of Malachi not to pay the tithe was counted robbery, can a  
6                   Christian who with-holds the tenth be-now, any more than then--counted honest towards  
7                   God?

8                   Right giving is a part of right living. The living is not right when the giving is wrong. The giving is wrong when  
9                   we steal God's portion to spend it on ourselves."

10                  It is significant that in the Soviet Union, any charitable activity is strictly forbidden to religious groups." If a  
11                  church group were to collect funds or goods to administer relief to sick and needy members of the congregation  
12                  or community, it would immediately create a power independent of the state as the remedy for social problems.  
13                  It would moreover create a power which would reach people more directly, efficiently, and powerfully. The  
14                  consequence would be a direct affront to the preeminence of the state. For this reason, in the democracies  
15                  orphanages have been steadily the target of repressive legislation to eliminate them, and charity has been  
16                  preempted by the state increasingly as a major step towards totalitarianism.<sup>4</sup>

17                  Lansdell was right. **Those who do not tithe are spiritual anarchists: they destroy both the freedom and order**  
18                  **of society and unleash the demons of statism [Socialism].**

19                  [The Institutes of Biblical Law, Rousas John Rushdoony, 1973, pp. 56-58]

20                  God's law of tithe protects mainly the poor, needy, widows, and orphans because these are the most vulnerable members of  
21                  any society:

22                  **"Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble,**  
23                  **and to keep oneself unspotted from the world [and the corrupted governments and laws of the world]."**  
24                  [James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]

25                  **"A father of the fatherless, a defender of widows,**  
26                  **Is God in His holy habitation.**  
27                  God sets the solitary in families;  
28                  He brings out those who are bound into prosperity;  
29                  But the rebellious dwell in a dry land."  
30                  [Psalm 68:5-6, Bible, NKJV]

31                  "You shall not afflict any widow or fatherless child."  
32                  [Exodus 22:2, Bible, NKJV]

33                  "When you beat your olive trees, you shall not go over the boughs again; it shall be for the stranger, the  
34                  fatherless, and the widow. When you gather the grapes of your vineyard, you shall not glean it afterward; it  
35                  shall be for the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow."  
36                  [Deut. 24:20-21, Bible, NKJV]

37                  **"Cursed is the one who perverts the justice due the stranger, the fatherless, and widow."** "And all the people  
38                  shall say, "Amen!"  
39                  [Deut. 27:19, Bible, NKJV]

40                  **"The LORD watches over the strangers; He relieves the fatherless and widow; But the way of the wicked He**  
41                  **turns upside down."**  
42                  [Psalm 146:9, Bible, NKJV]

43                  "Defend the fatherless, Plead for the widow."  
44                  [Isaiah 1:17, Bible, NKJV]

45                  **"For if you thoroughly amend your ways and your doings, if you thoroughly execute judgment between a man**  
46                  **and his neighbor, if you do not oppress the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, and do not shed innocent**  
47                  **blood in this place, or walk after other gods to your hurt, then I will cause you to dwell in this place, in the**  
48                  **land that I gave to your fathers forever and ever."**  
49                  [Jer. 7:5-7, Bible, NKJV]

---

<sup>4</sup> Lansdell, *Tithe in Scripture*, p. 148.

1 *Thus says the LORD: "Execute judgment and righteousness, and deliver the plundered out of the hand of the*  
2 *oppressor. Do no wrong and do no violence to the stranger, the fatherless, or the widow, nor shed innocent*  
3 *blood in this place."*  
4 *[Jer. 22:3, Bible, NKJV]*

5 *"Do not oppress the widow or the fatherless, The alien or the poor. Let none of you plan evil in his heart*  
6 *Against his brother."*  
7 *[Zech. 7:10, Bible, NKJV]*

8 Lysander Spooner describes the purpose of all legitimate de jure government as follows:

9 ***"Government is established for the protection of the weak against the strong. This is the principal, if not the***  
10 ***sole motive for the establishment of all legitimate government. It is only the weaker party that lose their***  
11 ***liberties, when a government becomes oppressive.*** The stronger party, in all governments are free by virtue of  
12 *their superior strength. They never oppress themselves. Legislation is the work of this stronger party; and if, in*  
13 *addition to the sole power of legislation, they have the sole power of determining what legislation shall be*  
14 *enforced, they have all power in their hands, and the weaker party are the subjects of an absolute government.*  
15 *Unless the weaker party have a veto, they have no power whatever in the government and...no liberties... The*  
16 *trial by jury is the only institution that gives the weaker party any veto upon the power of the stronger.*  
17 *Consequently it is the only institution that gives them any effective voice in the government, or any guaranty*  
18 *against oppression."*  
19 *[Essay entitled "Trial by Jury", Lysander Spooner]*

20 When the above purpose of ALL civil government is violated, you end up with a DE FACTO government that is scorned  
21 by God Himself:

22 *"But woe to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for*  
23 *you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. Woe to you, scribes and*  
24 *Pharisees, hypocrites! **For you devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore you***  
25 ***will receive greater condemnation.***

26 *Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he*  
27 *is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves."*

28 *"Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the*  
29 *gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple*  
30 *that sanctifies the gold?"*  
31 *[Matt. 23:13-17, Bible, NKJV]*

32 To put Rushdoony's earlier analysis in contemporary terms, when people don't tithe and give to help the poor, widows,  
33 fatherless, and needy in their own family or their church with tithes and free will offerings as God commands, then:

- 34 1. The poor are left in a desperate and vulnerable position that causes them to dispense with their scruples for the sake of  
35 expediency and survival.
- 36 2. Once the scruples are dispensed, they are likely to abuse their authority as jurists and voters to obtain financial favors  
37 or "benefits" from the government. Since it is a CRIME to bribe a voter, then anyone who has a financial interest in  
38 the outcome of an election should not be allowed to vote, and least of all poor voters who want to elect socialist  
39 candidates that promise them goodies. But through "selective enforcement" and cronyism, this type of crime is not  
40 only not prosecuted, but is protected because it grows political empires. Congressman Michelle Bachman, a former  
41 IRS attorney, calls this "gangster government", in which protecting criminal activity of politicians by the Department  
42 of Justice is used to buy political favors and expand socialism.
- 43 3. Politicians will then be elected by these poor and underprivileged who have promised the poor or the have nots some  
44 state favor, "benefit" or program for free, paid for with money that is ultimately STOLEN from the haves.  
45 Governments don't produce anything. They only steal, consume, and redistribute wealth.
- 46 4. In order to facilitate the transfer of wealth, gold backed currency then will have to be eliminated and replaced with fiat  
47 currency, so that the corrupted politicians can in effect print/counterfeit money to pay for the voter bribes they  
48 promised during election time. This started mainly with Franklin Delano Roosevelt (FDR) and his "New Deal". It was  
49 implemented with a combination of a misleading Sixteenth Amendment and the Federal Reserve, two balancing forces.
- 50 5. The tax system will then be abused as a vehicle to transfer wealth from the haves to the have nots as a way to provide  
51 charity to the have nots.
- 52 6. The haves will be punished for their virtues and quit producing because the taxes will be so high that they abandon  
53 their role as producers.

- 1 7. As the producers abandon the tax rolls, the government debt will accumulate and the government will become  
2 insolvent and bankrupt.  
3 8. The economy will collapse and revolution and anarchy will result.

4 Every major civilization goes through the above stages and inevitably collapses. The transformation is accomplished by  
5 abusing tax money as a form of bribery.

6 *"The king establishes the land by justice, But he who receives bribes [socialist handouts, government "benefits",  
7 or PLUNDER stolen from nontaxpayers] overthrows it."  
8 [Prov. 29:4, Bible, NKJV]*

9 *"For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their  
10 greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows."  
11 [1 Tim. 6:10, Bible, NKJV]*

12 *"Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure  
13 [unearned money from the government] that war in your members [and your democratic governments]? You  
14 lust [after other people's money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to increase your standard of living]  
15 and covet [the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your government to STEAL for you!]. You  
16 fight and war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your idleness]. Yet you do not have because  
17 you do not ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You ask and do not receive, because you  
18 ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that  
19 friendship with the world [for the governments of the world] is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to  
20 be a friend of the world [or the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of God."  
21 [James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]*

22 These socialist bribes called "benefits" are described in the Book of Revelations as "fornication" and the people who  
23 participate in them as "Babylon the Great Harlot". See Rev. 17. The people dispensing the bribes are described in Rev.  
24 19:19 as "the kings of the earth" or political rulers.

25 *"Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot [the atheist totalitarian democracy] who sits on  
26 many waters [which are described as seas and multitudes of people in Rev. 17:15], with whom the kings of  
27 the earth [political rulers of today] committed fornication [intercourse], and the inhabitants of the earth were  
28 made drunk with the wine of her fornication [intercourse, usurious and harmful commerce]."*

29 *So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness. And I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was  
30 full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet,  
31 and adorned with gold and precious stones and pearls, having in her hand a golden cup full of abominations  
32 and the filthiness of her fornication [intercourse]. And on her forehead a name was written: MYSTERY,  
33 BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND OF THE ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.*

34 *I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw  
35 her, I marveled with great amazement."  
36 [Rev. 17:1-6, Bible, NKJV]*

37 The "fornication" spoken of is legally defined as "commerce". Note the use of the word "intercourse" in the definition of  
38 "commerce":

39 *"Commerce. ...Intercourse by way of trade and traffic between different peoples or states and the citizens or  
40 inhabitants thereof, including not only the purchase, sale, and exchange of commodities, but also the  
41 instrumentalities [governments] and agencies by which it is promoted and the means and appliances by which it  
42 is carried on..."  
43 [Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269]*

44 The Bible describes how Christians are to react to the above mechanisms in the following prophecy:

45 *Avoid Bad Company*

46 *"My son, if sinners [socialists, in this case] entice you,  
47 Do not consent  
48 If they say, "Come with us,  
49 Let us lie in wait to shed blood;  
50 Let us lurk secretly for the innocent [nontaxpayers, the newborn, and the producers] without cause;  
51 Let us swallow them alive like Sheol,  
52 And whole, like those who go down to the Pit:*

We shall fill our houses with spoil [plunder];  
Cast in your lot among us,  
Let us all have one purse [the GOVERNMENT purse]”--  
My son, do not walk in the way with them,  
Keep your foot from their path;  
For their feet run to evil,  
And they make haste to shed blood.  
Surely, in vain the net is spread  
In the sight of any bird;  
But they lie in wait for their own blood.  
They lurk secretly for their own lives.  
So are the ways of everyone who is greedy for gain;  
It takes away the life of its owners.”  
[Proverbs 1:10-19, Bible, NKJV]

The plunder spoken of above is the abuse of the government’s taxing power to transfer wealth between private parties, which the U.S. Supreme Court held is NOT “taxation” as legally defined but THEFT. That is why the Bible calls it “plunder”:

*“The power to tax is, therefore, the strongest, the most pervading of all powers of government, reaching directly or indirectly to all classes of the people. It was said by Chief Justice Marshall, in the case of **McCulloch v. Md., 4 Wheat. 431**, that the power to tax is the power to destroy. A striking instance of the truth of the proposition is seen in the fact that the existing tax of ten per cent, imposed by the United States on the circulation of all other banks than the National Banks, drove out of existence every \*state bank of circulation within a year or two after its passage. This power can be readily employed against one class of individuals and in favor of another, so as to ruin the one class and give unlimited wealth and prosperity to the other, if there is no implied limitation of the uses for which the power may be exercised.*

To lay, with one hand, the power of the government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it upon favored individuals to aid private enterprises and build up private fortunes, is none the less a robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.

Nor is it taxation. ‘A tax,’ says Webster’s Dictionary, ‘is a rate or sum of money assessed on the person or property of a citizen by government for the use of the nation or State.’ ‘Taxes are burdens or charges imposed by the Legislature upon persons or property to raise money for public purposes.’ Cooley, Const. Lim., 479.

Coulter, J., in *Northern Liberties v. St. John’s Church*, 13 Pa. St., 104 says, very forcibly, ‘I think the common mind has everywhere taken in the understanding that taxes are a public imposition, levied by authority of the government for the purposes of carrying on the government in all its machinery and operations—that they are imposed for a public purpose.’ See, also *Pray v. Northern Liberties*, 31 Pa.St., 69; *Matter of Mayor of N.Y.*, 11 Johns., 77; *Camden v. Allen*, 2 Dutch., 398; *Sharpless v. Mayor*, supra; *Hanson v. Vernon*, 27 Ia., 47; *Whiting v. Fond du Lac*, supra.”  
[*Loan Association v. Topeka*, 20 Wall. 655 (1874)]

*“A tax, in the general understanding of the term and as used in the constitution, signifies an exaction for the support of the government. The word has never thought to connote the expropriation of money from one group for the benefit of another.”*  
[*U.S. v. Butler*, 297 U.S. 1 (1936)]

“The power to destroy” spoken of in *Loan Association* above is synonymous with the phrase “It takes away the life of its owners.” In Prov. 1:10-19.

The founding fathers were familiar with these mechanisms. As a matter of fact, the design of our republican form of government was based on a book entitled *The Spirit of Laws* by Baron Montesquieu. The following passage in that wonderful book states the following on this important subject:

“The principle of democracy is corrupted not only when the spirit of equality is extinct [BECAUSE OF FRANCHISES!], but likewise when they fall into a spirit of extreme equality, and when each citizen would fain be upon a level with those whom he has chosen to command him. Then the people, incapable of bearing the very power they have delegated, want to manage everything themselves, to debate for the senate, to execute for the magistrate, and to decide for the judges.

When this is the case, virtue can no longer subsist in the republic. The people are desirous of exercising the functions of the magistrates, who cease to be revered. The deliberations of the senate are slighted; all respect is



1 then laid aside for the senators, and consequently for old age. If there is no more respect for old age, there will  
2 be none presently for parents; deference to husbands will be likewise thrown off, and submission to masters.  
3 This license will soon become general, and the trouble of command be as fatiguing as that of obedience. Wives,  
4 children, slaves will shake off all subjection. No longer will there be any such thing as manners, order, or  
5 virtue.

6 We find in Xenophon's Banquet a very lively description of a republic in which the people abused their equality.  
7 Each guest gives in his turn the reason why he is satisfied. "Content I am," says Chamides, "because of my  
8 poverty. When I was rich, I was obliged to pay my court to informers, knowing I was more liable to be hurt by  
9 them than capable of doing them harm. The republic constantly demanded some new tax of me; and I could  
10 not decline paying. Since I have grown poor, I have acquired authority; nobody threatens me; I rather  
11 threaten others. I can go or stay where I please. The rich already rise from their seats and give me the way. I  
12 am a king, I was before a slave; I paid taxes to the republic, now it maintains [PAYS "BENEFITS" TO] me; I  
13 am no longer afraid of losing; but I hope to acquire."

14 The people fall into this misfortune when those in whom they confide, desirous of concealing their own  
15 corruption, endeavour to corrupt them. To disguise their own ambition, they speak to them only of the grandeur  
16 of the state; to conceal their own avarice, they incessantly flatter theirs.

17 The corruption will increase among the corruptors, and likewise among those who are already corrupted.  
18 The people will divide the public money among themselves [to pay "BENEFITS"], and, having added the  
19 administration of affairs to their indolence, will be for blending their poverty with the amusements of luxury.  
20 But with their indolence and luxury, nothing but the public treasure ["BENEFITS"] will be able to satisfy  
21 their demands.

22 We must not be surprised to see their suffrages [VOTES at the ballot box] given for money [GOVERNMENT  
23 "BENEFITS"]. It is impossible to make great largesses to the people without great extortion; and to compass  
24 this, the state must be subverted. The greater the advantages they seem to derive from their liberty, the nearer  
25 they approach towards the critical moment of losing it. Petty tyrants arise who have all the vices of a single  
26 tyrant. The small remains of liberty soon become insupportable; a single tyrant starts up, and the people are  
27 stripped of everything, even of the profits of their corruption.'

28 [The Spirit of Laws, Charles de Montesquieu, 1758,

29 SOURCE: [http://famguardian.org/Publications/SpiritOfLaws/sol\\_08.htm#002/](http://famguardian.org/Publications/SpiritOfLaws/sol_08.htm#002/)

30 Ayn Rand, who came hundreds of years after Montesquieu, and who fled Soviet communism and its attendant corruption to  
31 come to this country, stated the same thing as Montesquieu slightly differently, but much more passionately:

32 "But money demands of you the highest virtues, if you wish to make it or to keep it. Men who have no courage,  
33 pride, or self-esteem, men who have no moral sense of their right to their money and are not willing to  
34 defend it as they defend their life, men who apologize for being rich--will not remain rich for long. They are  
35 the natural bait for the swarms of looters [who gravitate like magnets to places of power in a corrupted  
36 government] that stay under rocks for centuries, but come crawling out at the first smell of a man who begs  
37 to be forgiven for the guilt of owning wealth. They will hasten to relieve him of the guilt--and of his life, as  
38 he deserves.

39 "Then you will see the rise of the double standard--the men who live by force [the de facto government an  
40 corrupted legal profession], yet count on those who live by trade to create the value of their looted money--  
41 the men who are the hitchhikers of virtue. In a moral society, these are the criminals, and the statutes are  
42 written to protect you against them. But when a society establishes criminals-by-right and looters-by-law--men  
43 who use force to seize the wealth of DISARMED victims--then money becomes its creators' avenger. Such  
44 looters [de facto government thieves] believe it safe to rob defenseless [made ignorant of the law by sneaky  
45 lawyers and politicians who run the public education system, in this case] men, once they've passed a law to  
46 disarm them. But their loot becomes the magnet for other looters, who get it from them as they got it. Then the  
47 race goes, not to the ablest at production, but to those most ruthless at brutality. When force is the standard, the  
48 murderer wins over the pickpocket. And then that society vanishes, in a spread of ruins and slaughter.

49 [Atlas Shrugged, Ayn Rand;

50 SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/MoneyBanking/Money/AynRandOnMoney.htm/>

51 The economic war fought in the jury box and the ballot box of a democratic government between the HAVES and the  
52 HAVE NOTS was also described by the U.S. Supreme Court in Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust:

53 "Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity that go down to the very  
54 foundation of the government. If the provisions of the constitution can be set aside by an act of congress,  
55 where is the course of usurpation to end? The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but  
56 the stepping-stone to others, larger and more sweeping, till our political contests will become a war of the  
57 poor against the rich--a war constantly growing in intensity and bitterness. 'If the court sanctions the power  
58 of discriminating taxation, and nullifies the uniformity mandate of the constitution,' as said by one who has  
59 been all his life a student of our institutions, 'it will mark the hour when the sure decadence of our present



1 *government will commence.' If the purely arbitrary limitation of four thousand dollars in the present law can*  
2 *be sustained, none having less than that amount of income being assessed or taxed for the support of the*  
3 *government, the limitation of future congresses may be fixed at a much larger sum, at five or ten or twenty*  
4 *thousand dollars, parties possessing an income of that amount alone being bound to bear the burdens of*  
5 *government; or the limitation may be designated at such an amount as a board of 'walking delegates' may deem*  
6 *necessary. There is no safety in allowing the limitation to be adjusted except in strict compliance with the*  
7 *mandates of the constitution, which require its taxation, if imposed by direct taxes, to be apportioned among the*  
8 *states according to their representation, and, if imposed by indirect taxes, to be uniform in operation and, so far*  
9 *as practicable, in proportion to their property, equal upon all citizens. Unless the rule of the constitution*  
10 *governs, a majority may fix the limitation at such rate as will not include any of their own number."*  
11 *[Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (1895)]*

12 In the above case, the very first national income tax was declared unconstitutional. The current one we have is equally  
13 unconstitutional but its unlawful nature is being disguised and protected with judicial verbiage, words of art, and criminal  
14 conflict of interest, mostly by a corrupted judiciary. For exhaustive evidence of this fact, see:

*Great IRS Hoax*, Form #11.302

<http://famguardian.org/Publications/GreatIRSHoax/GreatIRSHoax.htm>

15 The "war on capital" spoken of above in Pollock is actually a war against PRIVATE property. The right to own property  
16 includes the right to EXCLUDE all others from benefitting from or using it. Hence, REAL property ownership implies that  
17 the property CANNOT be taxed directly and that only avoidable activities can be taxed:

18 *Property. That which is peculiar or proper to any person; that which **belongs exclusively to one**. In the strict*  
19 *legal sense, **an aggregate of rights which are guaranteed and protected by the government**. *Fulton Light, Heat**  
20 *& Power Co. v. State, 65 Misc.Rep. 263, 121 N.Y.S. 536. The term is said to extend to every species of valuable*  
21 *right and interest. **More specifically, ownership; the unrestricted and exclusive right to a thing; the right to***  
22 ***dispose of a thing in every legal way, to possess it, to use it, and to exclude everyone else from interfering***  
23 ***with it. That dominion or indefinite right of use or disposition which one may lawfully exercise over***  
24 ***particular things or subjects. The exclusive right of possessing, enjoying, and disposing of a thing. The***  
25 ***highest right a man can have to anything; being used to refer to that right which one has to lands or***  
26 ***tenements, goods or chattels, which no way depends on another man's courtesy.***  
27 *[Black's Law Dictionary, Fifth Edition, p. 1095]*

28 The ultimate result of the war on PRIVATE property and PRIVATE "capital" as the U.S. Supreme Court calls it is to:

- 29 1. Convert RIGHTS into PRIVILEGES and FRANCHISES.
- 30 2. Turn all "citizens" and "residents" into public officers in the government.
- 31 3. Turn ABSOLUTE ownership into QUALIFIED ownership.
- 32 4. Make you the EQUITABLE rather than LEGAL owner of your property.
- 33 5. Use government identifying numbers as a means to "license" people to represent public offices in the government.
- 34 6. Use the association of government identifying numbers with property as a method to DONATE formerly PRIVATE
- 35 property to a PUBLIC use, PUBLIC purpose and/or a PUBLIC office.
- 36 7. Convert CONSTITUTIONAL courts into administrative FRANCHISE courts in which the "judge" is an Executive
- 37 rather than Judicial employee.

38 For more on the above mechanisms, see:

- 39 1. *The "Trade or Business" Scam*, Form #05.001  
40 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 41 2. *About SSNs and TINs on Government Forms and Correspondence*, Form #05.012  
42 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 43 3. *Why You are a Political Citizen but Civil Non-Citizen, National, and Nonresident Alien*, Form #05.006.  
44 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 45 4. *Why Your Government is Either a Thief or You are a "Public Officer" for Income Tax Purposes*, Form #05.008  
46 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 47 5. *Why Statutory Civil Law is Law for Government and Not Private Persons*, Form #05.037  
48 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

## 6 God's description of life under socialism

The Bible also describes what life is like in a culture in which the HAVE NOTS have won against the HAVES and outnumber the HAVES:

*"Run to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem;  
See now and know;  
And seek in her open places  
If you can find a man,*

**If there is anyone who executes judgment,  
Who seeks the truth,  
And I will pardon her.**

*Though they say, "As the LORD lives,"  
Surely they swear falsely."*

*O LORD, are not Your eyes on the truth?  
You have stricken them,  
But they have not grieved;  
You have consumed them,  
**But they have refused to receive correction.**  
They have made their faces harder than rock;  
They have refused to return [to Your ways].*

*Therefore I said, "Surely these are poor.  
**They are foolish;**  
**For they do not know the way of the LORD.**  
**The judgment of their God.**  
I will go to the great men and speak to them,  
For they have known the way of the LORD,  
The judgment of their God."*

*But these have altogether broken the yoke [God's law]  
And burst the bonds.  
**Therefore a lion from the forest shall slay them,**  
**A wolf of the deserts shall destroy them;**  
**A leopard will watch over their cities.**  
**Everyone who goes out from there shall be torn in pieces,**  
**Because their transgressions are many;**  
**Their backslidings have increased.***

*"How shall I pardon you for this?  
Your children have forsaken Me  
And sworn [on tax returns] by those [in government] that are not gods.  
When I had fed them to the full,  
Then they committed adultery [and fornication and sexual perversity]  
And assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses.  
They were like well-fed lusty stallions;  
Every one neighed after his neighbor's wife [sexual perversion].  
Shall I not punish them for these things?" says the LORD.  
"And shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?"*

***"Go up on her walls and destroy,  
But do not make a complete end.  
Take away her branches,  
For they are not the LORD's.  
For the house of Israel and the house of Judah  
Have dealt very treacherously with Me," says the LORD.***

***They have lied about the LORD [evolutionism],  
And said, "It is not He.  
Neither will evil come upon us,  
Nor shall we see sword or famine.  
And the prophets become wind,  
For the word is not in them.  
Thus shall it be done to them."***

Therefore thus says the LORD God of hosts:

"Because you speak this word,  
Behold, I will make My words in your mouth fire,  
And this people wood,  
And it shall devour them.  
**Behold, I will bring a nation [in the District of Columbia, Washington D.C.] against you from afar,**  
O house of Israel," says the LORD.  
"It is a mighty nation,  
It is an ancient nation,  
A nation whose language [legalese] you do not know,  
Nor can you understand what they say [in their deceitful laws].  
Their quiver is like an open tomb;  
They are all mighty [deceitful] men.  
**And they [and the IRS, their henchmen] shall eat up your harvest and your bread,**  
Which your sons and daughters should eat.  
**They shall eat up your flocks and your herds;**  
**They shall eat up your vines and your fig trees;**  
**They shall destroy your fortified cities [and businesses and families],**  
In which you trust, with the sword.

"Nevertheless in those days," says the LORD, "I will not make a complete end of you. <sup>19</sup>And it will be when you say, 'Why does the LORD our God do all these things to us?' then you shall answer them, 'Just as you have forsaken Me and served foreign gods in your land, so you shall serve aliens in a land that is not yours.'

"Declare this in the house of Jacob  
And proclaim it in Judah, saying,  
"Hear this now, O foolish people,  
Without understanding [ignorant and presumptuous],  
Who have eyes and see not,  
And who have ears and hear not:  
Do you not fear Me?" says the LORD.  
"Will you not tremble at My presence,  
Who have placed the sand as the bound of the sea,  
By a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass beyond it?  
And though its waves toss to and fro,  
Yet they cannot prevail;  
Though they roar, yet they cannot pass over it.  
**But this people has a defiant and rebellious heart;**  
**They have revolted and departed [from God's law].**  
**They do not say in their heart,**  
**"Let us now fear the LORD our God,**  
**Who gives rain, both the former and the latter, in its season.**  
**He reserves for us the appointed weeks of the harvest."**  
**Your iniquities have turned these things away,**  
**And your sins have withheld good from you.**

"For among My people are found wicked men [the IRS, federal reserve, bankers, lawyers, and politicians];  
They lie in wait as one who sets snares;  
They set a trap [using GOVERNMENT FRANCHISES];  
They catch men [with deceit and greed as their weapon].  
As a cage is full of birds,  
So their houses are full of deceit [IRS publications and law books and government propaganda].  
**Therefore they have become great and grown rich [from plundering YOUR money illegally].**  
**They have grown fat, they are sleek;**  
**Yes, they surpass the deeds of the wicked;**  
**They do not plead the cause,**  
**The cause of the fatherless;**  
**Yet they prosper,**  
**And the right of the needy they do not defend.**  
**Shall I not punish them for these things?" says the LORD.**  
**"Shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?"**

**"An astonishing and horrible thing**  
**Has been committed in the land:**  
The prophets prophesy falsely,  
And the priests [federal judges] rule by their own power;  
**And My people love to have it so.**  
But what will you do in the end?"

Here is what an early U.S. Supreme Court held about the sanctity of PRIVATE property, before the courts became corrupted and the judges became statutory “taxpayers” with a criminal conflict of interest. The illegal enforcement of the Internal Revenue Code by the I.R.S. would end immediately if we had judges this honest today:

*"A statutory provision which is not a legitimate police regulation cannot be made such by being placed in the same act with a police regulation, or by being enacted under a title that declares a purpose which would be a proper object for the exercise of that power.*

**"It being self-evident that, unless all things are held in common, some persons must have more property than others, it is from the nature of things impossible to uphold freedom of contract and the right of private property without at the same time recognizing as legitimate those inequalities of fortune that are the necessary result of the exercise of those rights.**

*"The Fourteenth Amendment recognizes "liberty" and "property" as coexistent human rights, and debars the states from any unwarranted interference with either.*

**"Since a state may not strike down the rights of liberty or property directly, it may not do so indirectly, as by declaring in effect that the public good requires the removal of those inequalities that are but the normal and inevitable result of the exercise of those rights, and then invoking the police power in order to remove the inequalities, without other object in view.**

**"The Fourteenth Amendment debars the states from striking down personal liberty or property rights or materially restricting their normal exercise excepting so far as may be incidentally necessary for the accomplishment of some other and paramount object, and one that concerns the public welfare. The mere restriction of liberty or of property rights cannot, of itself, be denominated "public welfare" and treated as a legitimate object of the police power, for such restriction is the very thing that is inhibited by the Amendment. [236 U.S. 31]"**  
**[Coppage v. Kansas, 236 U.S. 1 (1915)]**

## **7 Franchises are the main method by which democracies become corrupted, turn socialist, and become “de facto” rather than “de jure”<sup>5</sup>**

The design for our system of government came from Charles de Montesquieu in his seminal treatise entitled The Spirit of Laws. The Founding Fathers used this book more often than any other in the drafting of the Constitution. See:

*The Spirit of Laws*, Charles de Montesquieu, 1758  
<http://famguardian.org/Publications/SpiritOfLaws/sol.htm>

It was Montesquieu who first invented the idea of a republican government based on three branches, which is what we have, and we were the first country to implement his plan. He wrote his book in 1752 and the USA was first to implement it in 1789. In this book, Montesquieu predicted the very corruption personified in any kind of "benefit" or franchise, that would cause people to sell their vote to get more state favors. He talked about how franchises would extinguish what he called the "spirit of equality" that is the foundation of the constitution, and replace it with privilege, hypocrisy, injustice, and corruption on the scale we have now. His predictions are coming true in spades both with the original Social Security Act of 1935, the federal income tax, and with other SOCIALIST programs such as Medicare, Unemployment insurance, etc. The corruption, Montesquieu said, would come from the "benefits" and privileges and the flow of money that would corrupt the voters and cause the indolent to sanction the government through their vote to steal from the rich and give to the poor. This prediction is precisely the same prediction that the U.S. Supreme Court made in the Pollock case in 1895 after the first income tax was declared unconstitutional: That income tax, and every other type of franchise tax, would pit the poor against the rich in a battle of class warfare using the voting booth as the battlefield.

**"The principle of democracy is corrupted not only when the spirit of equality is extinct [BECAUSE OF FRANCHISES!], but likewise when they fall into a spirit of extreme equality, and when each citizen would fain be upon a level with those whom he has chosen to command him. Then the people, incapable of bearing the very power they have delegated, want to manage everything themselves, to debate for the senate, to execute for the magistrate, and to decide for the judges. When this is the case, virtue can no longer subsist in the republic. The people are desirous of exercising the functions of the magistrates, who cease to be revered. The**

<sup>5</sup> Adapted from *Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030, Section 2.15; <https://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>.

1 deliberations of the senate are slighted; all respect is then laid aside for the senators, and consequently for old  
2 age. If there is no more respect for old age, there will be none presently for parents; deference to husbands will  
3 be likewise thrown off, and submission to masters. This license will soon become general, and the trouble of  
4 command be as fatiguing as that of obedience. Wives, children, slaves will shake off all subjection. No longer  
5 will there be any such thing as manners, order, or virtue.

6 We find in Xenophon's Banqueta very lively description of a republic in which the people abused their equality.  
7 Each guest gives in his turn the reason why he is satisfied. "Content I am," says Chamides, "because of my  
8 poverty. When I was rich, I was obliged to pay my court to informers, knowing I was more liable to be hurt by  
9 them than capable of doing them harm. The republic constantly demanded some new tax of me; and I could  
10 not decline paying. Since I have grown poor, I have acquired authority; nobody threatens me; I rather  
11 threaten others. I can go or stay where I please. The rich already rise from their seats and give me the way. I  
12 am a king, I was before a slave; I paid taxes to the republic, now it maintains [PAYS "BENEFITS" TO] me; I  
13 am no longer afraid of losing; but I hope to acquire."

14 The people fall into this misfortune when those in whom they confide, desirous of concealing their own  
15 corruption, endeavour to corrupt them. To disguise their own ambition, they speak to them only of the grandeur  
16 of the state; to conceal their own avarice, they incessantly flatter theirs.

17 The corruption will increase among the corruptors, and likewise among those who are already corrupted.  
18 The people will divide the public money among themselves [to pay "BENEFITS"], and, having added the  
19 administration of affairs to their indolence, will be for blending their poverty with the amusements of luxury.  
20 But with their indolence and luxury, nothing but the public treasure ["BENEFITS"] will be able to satisfy  
21 their demands.

22 We must not be surprised to see their suffrages [VOTES at the ballot box] given for money [GOVERNMENT  
23 "BENEFITS" UNDER A FRANCHISE]. It is impossible to make great largesses to the people without great  
24 extortion: and to compass this, the state must be subverted. The greater the advantages they seem to derive  
25 from their liberty, the nearer they approach towards the critical moment of losing it. Petty tyrants arise who  
26 have all the vices of a single tyrant. The small remains of liberty soon become insupportable; a single tyrant  
27 starts up, and the people are stripped of everything, even of the profits of their corruption."

28 [*The Spirit of Laws*, Charles de Montesquieu, 1758,

29 SOURCE: [http://famguardian.org/Publications/SpiritOfLaws/sol\\_08.htm](http://famguardian.org/Publications/SpiritOfLaws/sol_08.htm)]

30 Montesquieu states that franchises and the "benefits" that implement and pay for them will subvert the state. What he  
31 means is that it will undermine the sovereignty of the "state", which is "We the People" in this country, by destroying their  
32 sovereignty and making them the prey of greedy judges and lawyers with a conflict of interest who are more interested in  
33 expanding their paycheck and their importance than in the advancing the purpose of law, which is to protect your  
34 PRIVATE rights by keeping them from being converted to PUBLIC rights and franchises without your consent. A  
35 "subverted" state is called a "de facto state". The methods by which a de jure state is converted into a de facto state are  
36 exhaustively described in the following document:

*De Facto Government Scam*, Form #05.043

<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

37 Frenchman Alexis de Tocqueville in his famous work *Democracy in America*, alluded to the same weakness of democracy  
38 as Montesquieu did above. His work is frequently quoted by no less than the U.S Supreme Court. The "physical  
39 gratifications" he speaks of are the material pleasures bestowed by a generous socialist government intent on bribing voters.  
40 He says that the CHIEF business of Americans is "to remain their own masters", meaning to NOT surrender their rights for  
41 the "benefits" of a socialist franchise.

42 *There is, indeed, a most dangerous passage in the history of a democratic people. When the taste for physical*  
43 *gratifications among them has grown more rapidly than their education and their experience of free*  
44 *institutions, the time will come when men are carried away and lose all self-restraint at the sight of the new*  
45 *possessions they are about to obtain. In their intense and exclusive anxiety to make a fortune they lose sight of*  
46 *the close connection that exists between the private fortune of each and the prosperity of all. It is not necessary*  
47 *to do violence to such a people in order to strip them of the rights they enjoy; they themselves willingly loosen*  
48 *their hold. The discharge of political duties appears to them to be a troublesome impediment which diverts them*  
49 *from their occupations and business. If they are required to elect representatives, to support the government by*  
50 *personal service, to meet on public business, they think they have no time, they cannot waste their precious*  
51 *hours in useless engagements; such idle amusements are unsuited to serious men who are engaged with the*  
52 *more important interests of life. These people think they are following the principle of self-interest, but the*  
53 *idea they entertain of that principle is a very crude one; and the better to look after what they call their own*  
54 *business, they neglect their chief business, which is to remain their own masters.*



As the citizens who labor do not care to attend to public affairs, and as the class which might devote its leisure to these duties has ceased to exist, the place of the government is, as it were, unfilled. If at that critical moment some able and ambitious man grasps the supreme power, he will find the road to every kind of usurpation open before him. If he attends for some time only to the material prosperity of the country, no more will be demanded of him. Above all, he must ensure public tranquillity: men who are possessed by the passion for physical gratification generally find out that the turmoil of freedom disturbs their welfare [checks] before they discover how freedom itself serves to promote it. If the slightest rumor of public commotion intrudes into the petty pleasures of private life, they are aroused and alarmed by it. The fear of anarchy perpetually haunts them, and they are always ready to fling away their freedom at the first disturbance.

I readily admit that public tranquillity is a great good, but at the same time I cannot forget that all nations have been enslaved by being kept in good order. Certainly it is not to be inferred that nations ought to despise public tranquillity, but that state ought not to content them. A nation that asks nothing of its government but the maintenance of order is already a slave at heart, the slave of its own well-being, awaiting only the hand that will bind it. By such a nation the despotism of faction is not less to be dreaded than the despotism of an individual. When the bulk of the community are engrossed by private concerns, the smallest parties need not despair of getting the upper hand in public affairs. At such times it is not rare to see on the great stage of the world, as we see in our theaters, a multitude represented by a few players, who alone speak in the name of an absent or inattentive crowd: they alone are in action, while all others are stationary; they regulate everything by their own caprice; they change the laws and tyrannize at will over the manners of the country, and then men wonder to see into how small a number of weak and worthless hands a great people may fall.

[Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter XIV

SOURCE:

[http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracynamerica/ch2\\_14.htm](http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracynamerica/ch2_14.htm)]

I have shown how the dread of disturbance and the love of well-being insensibly lead democratic nations to increase the functions of central government [socialism] as the only power which appears to be intrinsically sufficiently strong, enlightened, and secure to protect them from anarchy. I would now add that all the particular circumstances which tend to make the state of a democratic community agitated and precarious enhance this general propensity and lead private persons more and more to sacrifice their rights to their tranquillity.

A people is therefore never so disposed to increase the functions of central government as at the close of a long and bloody revolution, which, after having wrested property from the hands of its former possessors, has shaken all belief and filled the nation with fierce hatreds, conflicting interests, and contending factions. The love of public tranquillity becomes at such times an indiscriminate passion, and the members of the community are apt to conceive a most inordinate devotion to order.

[Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter IV

SOURCE:

[http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracynamerica/ch4\\_04.htm](http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracynamerica/ch4_04.htm)]

What De Tocqueville is describing is what we call “the tyranny of necessity”, where the government has robbed every one of their substance and they are desperate and need a government check. The Bible describes this tyranny as follows and advises people to WORK instead of waiting on a government check or handout.:

*“Go to the ant, you sluggard! Consider her ways and be wise, which, having no captain [parens patriae government], overseer or ruler, provides her supplies in the summer, and gathers her food in the harvest, how long will you slumber, O sluggard? When will you rise from your sleep? A little sleep, a little slumber, a little folding of the hands to sleep--so shall your poverty come on you like a prowler [and government dependence], and your need like an armed man.”*  
[Prov. 6:11, Bible, NKJV]

*“The hand of the diligent will rule,  
But the lazy [or irresponsible] man [who votes for government largess so he doesn’t have to work] will be put to forced labor [working for the government through income taxes].”*  
[Prov. 12:24, Bible, NKJV]

De Tocqueville then predicted how despotism, tyranny, and socialism would be introduced into a democracy. His predictions are completely consistent with that of Montesquieu:

I seek to trace the novel features under which despotism may appear in the world. The first thing that strikes the observation is an innumerable multitude of men, all equal and alike, incessantly endeavoring to procure the petty and paltry pleasures with which they glut their lives. Each of them, living apart, is as a stranger to the fate of all the rest; his children and his private friends constitute to him the whole of mankind. As for the rest of his fellow citizens, he is close to them, but he does not see them; he touches them, but he does not feel them; he



exists only in himself and for himself alone; and if his kindred still remain to him, he may be said at any rate to have lost his country.

Above this race of men stands an immense and tutelary power, which takes upon itself alone to secure their gratifications [government “benefits”] and to watch over their fate. That power is absolute [totalitarian/fascist], minute, regular, provident, and mild. It would be like the authority of a parent if, like that authority, its [stated] object was to prepare men for manhood; but it seeks, on the contrary, to keep them in perpetual childhood: it is well content that the people should rejoice, provided they think of nothing but rejoicing. For their happiness such a government willingly labors, but it chooses to be the sole agent and the only arbiter of that happiness; it provides for their security, foresees and supplies their necessities, facilitates their pleasures, manages their principal concerns, directs their industry, regulates the descent of property, and subdivides their inheritances: what remains, but to spare them all the care of thinking and all the trouble of living?

Thus it every day renders the exercise of the free agency of man less useful and less frequent; it circumscribes the will within a narrower range and gradually robs a man of all the uses of himself. The principle of equality has prepared men for these things; it has predisposed men to endure them and often to look on them as benefits.

After having thus successively taken each member of the community in its powerful grasp and fashioned him at will, the supreme power then extends its arm over the whole community. It covers the surface of society with a network of small complicated rules [the ADMINISTRATIVE STATE], minute and uniform, through which the most original minds and the most energetic characters cannot penetrate, to rise above the crowd. The will of man is not shattered, but softened, bent, and guided; men are seldom forced by it to act, but they are constantly restrained from acting. Such a power does not destroy, but it prevents existence; it does not tyrannize, but it compresses, enervates, extinguishes, and stupefies a people, till each nation is reduced to nothing better than a flock of timid and industrious animals, of which the government is the shepherd [parens patriae].

I have always thought that servitude of the regular, quiet, and gentle kind which I have just described might be combined more easily than is commonly believed with some of the outward forms of freedom, and that it might even establish itself under the wing [auspices] of the sovereignty of the people.

Our contemporaries are constantly excited by two conflicting passions: they want to be led, and they wish to remain free. As they cannot destroy either the one or the other of these contrary propensities, they strive to satisfy them both at once. They devise a sole, tutelary, and all-powerful form of government, but elected by the people. They combine the principle of centralization and that of popular sovereignty; this gives them a respite: they console themselves for being in tutelage by the reflection that they have chosen their own guardians. Every man allows himself to be put in leading-strings, because he sees that it is not a person or a class of persons, but the people at large who hold the end of his chain.

By this system the people shake off their state of dependence just long enough to select their master and then relapse into it again. A great many persons at the present day are quite contented with this sort of compromise between administrative despotism and the sovereignty of the people; and they think they have done enough for the protection of individual freedom when they have surrendered it to the power of the nation at large. This does not satisfy me: the nature of him I am to obey signifies less to me than the fact of extorted obedience. I do not deny, however, that a constitution of this kind appears to me to be infinitely preferable to one which, after having concentrated all the powers of government, should vest them in the hands of an irresponsible person or body of persons. Of all the forms that democratic despotism could assume, the latter would assuredly be the worst.

[Democracy in America, Alexis de Tocqueville, Chapter VI

SOURCE:

[http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracyinamerica/ch4\\_06.htm](http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/DeTocquevilleAlex/democracyinamerica/ch4_06.htm)]

You can watch an interesting video on the above mechanism described by De Tocqueville for corrupting democracies on our Youtube channel as follows. The video refers to a socialist government as “the infantilizing state”:

*Why Are Conservatives So Mean?*, Andrew Klavan

[http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sC6MnwknfmU&list=PLin1scINPTOt-J4dFvOOBIxW\\_YYIK\\_is8](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sC6MnwknfmU&list=PLin1scINPTOt-J4dFvOOBIxW_YYIK_is8)

A very important question to answer about franchises is the following:

“At precisely what point do franchises become abusive and inevitably lead to the conversion of a de jure government into a de facto one?”

Our answer to the above question is that any government which does not stay within the bounds of the following will inevitably transition from de jure to de facto, become corrupted, and violate the goal of protecting private rights that was

the purpose of its creation when any one or more of the following is permitted in courts of law or administrative interactions of the government with anyone and everyone:

1. The civil status of those who participate in franchises (e.g. ‘taxpayers’) is confused or made legally indistinguishable from with PRIVATE non-resident non-person humans that are non-participants. This makes it impossible to quit the franchise.
2. Failure to participate in any civil franchise results in civil or criminal penalties. This includes
  - 2.1. Voting and jury service. Voting and jury service are public franchises and eligibility can be revoked by the state at will.
  - 2.2. Driver licensing.
  - 2.3. Social Security.
  - 2.4. Medicare.
  - 2.5. Obama care.
  - 2.6. Professional licensing.Technically, the only “persons” who could lawfully be the subject of such a penalty are those who are ALREADY within the government. Otherwise, the Thirteenth Amendment prohibition against involuntary servitude has been transgressed.
3. Franchises are implemented for any purpose OTHER than voting and jury service. For instance, the following types of franchises should not be allowed:
  - 3.1. Family Code.
  - 3.2. Vehicle Code.
  - 3.3. Social Security.
  - 3.4. Medicare.
  - 3.5. Obama care.
  - 3.6. Professional licensing.
4. Signing up for voting or jury service makes you an involuntary party to any OTHER type of franchise, such as income tax, the vehicle code, the family code, or the civil statutory codes.
  - 4.1. For instance, signing up for a driver license automatically makes you a voter, jurist, or any OTHER type of franchisee.
  - 4.2. All franchises must stand alone and not be connected to OTHER franchises, and you should be able to quit at ANY TIME if you no longer desire the “benefits”. In other words, if the costs exceed the “benefits”, then you should be able to stop buying the “product”. Government is merely a business, and the only “product” that it produces is in fact “protection”. Each separate type of protection or franchise is merely one of many “products” it offers.
  - 4.3. What business can FORCE you to buy ALL of its products if you need only one of them? If private businesses can’t do it, and we are all equal according to the U.S. Supreme Court, then why can the GOVERNMENT have a monopoly on the ability to do this? Isn’t the Sherman Antitrust Act applicable to the government just like everyone else?
5. The government, in enforcing civil franchise provisions:
  - 5.1. Does not have the burden of proving that those they are enforcing against CONSENTED IN WRITING IN COURT, BEFORE any type of enforcement can lawfully commence against you.
  - 5.2. Is allowed to merely PRESUME that you consented and treat you as a participant, and never have any burden of proof?
  - 5.3. Sanctions those litigating against its illegal enforcements against non-participants for demanding proof on the record of proceeding that you consented to participate IN WRITING?
6. Franchise provisions are enforced against those who do not want to participate and who have notified the government of the same in writing. The origin of all just government authority, according to the Declaration of Independence, is “CONSENT OF THE GOVERNED”. Shouldn’t they have to procure and prove the consent and not ignore you when you say you DO NOT consent or want to quit?
7. Civil servants are not liable or accountable when they ignore notifications that you don’t want to participate and enforce against non-participants anyway. They wrongfully invoke any of the following as an excuse to protect their own organized extortion in doing so:
  - 7.1. Sovereign immunity.
  - 7.2. Official immunity.
  - 7.3. Judicial immunity.
8. Government or any and every one of its actors is/are not accountable for the accuracy or truthfulness of any and all communications with the public about their authority to enforce:

- 8.1. They are not required to PROVE THAT AUTHORITY IN ADMINISTRATIVE CORRESPONDENCE WITH EVIDENCE in writing with the people who are the targets of enforcement. For instance, 26 U.S.C. §6065 requires all tax correspondence to be signed under penalty of perjury, yet NO ONE from the IRS ever does so and therefore has a sanction to LIE with impunity. They even use fictitious names to protect themselves while they are criminally violating your rights in their illegal enforcement.
- 8.2. They will call participation “voluntary” and yet resolutely refuse to protect your rights to NOT VOLUNTEER. The duress that forces you to volunteer is CRIMINAL activity, and by refusing to prosecute those who institute the duress, indirectly they are engaging in a protection racket and criminally obstructing justice.
- 8.3. They will ignore criminal complaints against those who are compelling participation, and especially banks and employers.
9. Forms administering each franchise do not recognize:
- 9.1. Those who do not consent to participate and are not required to participate.
- 9.2. Those who are not domiciled or resident within the civil jurisdiction of the franchisor.
- 9.3. Your ability and right to document duress from people who compelled you to impersonate someone who consents, such as banks and employers. In other words, there is no blank on a form or any form to indicate duress and who the source was.
10. Forms used to document injuries force you to acquire a civil status under civil statutory franchises codes in order get a remedy for enforcement against NON-PARTICIPANTS. This is how the Federal Tort Claims Act administration injuriously works.
11. The government does not swiftly and consistently criminally prosecute all those who compel participation in franchises. Instead, they falsely claim that EVERYONE has to participate and look the other way when participation is compelled and you notify them of the criminal duress. For an example of such notification, see:  
*Affidavit of Duress: Illegal Tax Enforcement by De Facto Officers*, Form #02.005  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
12. Private third parties such as banks, employers:
- 12.1. Can criminally compel you to participate in franchises by abusing the forms and processes used to offer you their services.
- 12.2. Are financially incentivized to compel you to participate with “kickbacks” such as tax breaks or “selective enforcement”.
- 12.3. Are not criminally prosecuted by the government for the above. Instead, they are protected from enforcement by government through “selective enforcement” because of the “kickbacks” or “public officer kickbacks” that the compulsion produces in revenue to the government.
- This inevitably leads large corporations to compel all their employees and customers to in effect pay the taxes that only government instrumentalities such as corporations can lawfully be accountable and liable for. This is what most freedom lovers currently refer to as “corporate fascism”.

If you want to fight or complain about or prosecute anything about the misuse of franchises, you should focus on the above. Any other efforts at protecting yourself from illegal enforcement will be in vain.

An entire book has been written about the evils and pitfalls of socialism that lie at the terminal end of a democracy corrupted by the legal abuse of franchises. You can read that book on the Family Guardian Fellowship sister site below:

<p><u><i>The Law</i></u>, Frederic Bastiat <a href="http://famguardian.org/Publications/TheLaw/TheLaw.htm">http://famguardian.org/Publications/TheLaw/TheLaw.htm</a></p>
--

Finally, if you would like to learn more about the causes and remedies for government corruption that corrupts societies, see:

1. *Government Corruption: Causes and Remedies*, Form #12.026  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
2. *Government Corruption*, Form #11.401  
<http://sedm.org/home/government-corruption/>

## 8 Jesus refused a domicile, refused to participate in all human franchises, benefits, and privileges, and refused the “civil status” that made them possible

Jesus definitely participated in God’s franchise, being a member of the Holy Trinity. However, he refused to participate in human franchises. It may interest the reader to learn that Jesus had NO civil status under man’s law and refused to participate in any government “benefit”, franchise, or privilege:

### The Humbled and Exalted Christ

*“Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being in the form of God, did not consider it robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, taking the form of a bondservant, and coming in the likeness of men. And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient to the point of death, even the death of the cross. Therefore God also has highly exalted Him and given Him the name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of those in heaven, and of those on earth, and of those under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”*  
[Phil 2:5-11, Bible, NKJV]

Below is a famous Bible commentary on the above passage:

*“Think of yourselves the way Christ Jesus thought of himself. He had equal status with God but didn’t think so much of himself that he had to cling to the advantages of that status no matter what. Not at all. When the time came, he set aside the privileges of deity and took on the status of a slave, became human! Having become human, he stayed human. It was an incredibly humbling process. He didn’t claim special privileges. Instead, he lived a selfless, obedient life and then died a selfless, obedient death—and the worst kind of death at that—a crucifixion.”*

*“Because of that obedience, God lifted him high and honored him far beyond anyone or anything, ever, so that all created beings in heaven and on earth—even those long ago dead and buried—will bow in worship before this Jesus Christ, and call out in praise that he is the Master of all, to the glorious honor of God the Father.”*  
[Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5–11). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress]

Below is a summary of lessons learned from the above amplified version of the same passage, put into the context of privileges, civil status, and franchises:

1. Jesus forsook having a civil status and the privileges and franchises of the Kingdom of Heaven franchise that made that status possible.
2. He instead chose a civil status lower for Himself than other mere humans below him in status.
3. BECAUSE He forsook the “benefits”, privileges, and franchises associated with the civil status of “God” while here on earth, he was blessed beyond all measure by God.

Moral of the Story: We can only be blessed by God if we do not seek to use benefits, privileges, and franchises to elevate ourselves above anyone else or to pursue a civil status above others.

*“Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted [“foreign”, “sovereign”, and/or “alien”] from the world [and the corrupt BEAST governments and rulers of the world].”*  
[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]

One cannot be “unspotted from the world” without surrendering and not pursuing any and all HUMAN civil statuses, franchises, or benefits. Those who are Christians, however, cannot avoid the privileged status and office of “Christian” under God’s laws.

The OPPOSITE of being “unspotted from the world” is the following. The pursuit of government “benefits” or the civil status that makes them possible is synonymous with the phrase “your desire for pleasure” in the following passage.

*“Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure [unearned money or “benefits”, privileges, or franchises, from the government] that war in your members [and your democratic governments]? You lust [after other people’s money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to increase your standard of living] and covet [the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your government to STEAL for you!]. You fight and war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your*

idleness]. Yet you do not have because you do not ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. **Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship [statutory “citizenship”] with the world [or the governments of the world] is enmity with God?** Whoever therefore wants to be a friend [STATUTORY “citizen”, “resident”, “inhabitant”, “person” franchisee] of the world [or the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of God.”  
[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]

The personification of those who did the OPPOSITE of Jesus and pursued civil status, rewards, benefits, privileges, and franchises were the Pharisees, and these people were the ONLY people Jesus got mad at. Here’s what He said about them in one of his very few angry tirades. Back then, they had a theocracy and the Bible was their law book, so the term “religion scholars” meant the lawyers of that time, not the pastors of today’s time.

*I’ve had it with you! You’re hopeless, you religion scholars, you Pharisees! Frauds! Your lives are roadblocks to God’s kingdom. You refuse to enter, and won’t let anyone else in either.*

*“You’re hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You go halfway around the world to make a convert, but once you get him you make him into a replica of yourselves, double-damned.*

*“You’re hopeless! What arrogant stupidity! You say, ‘If someone makes a promise with his fingers crossed, that’s nothing; but if he swears with his hand on the Bible, that’s serious.’ What ignorance! Does the leather on the Bible carry more weight than the skin on your hands? And what about this piece of trivia: ‘If you shake hands on a promise, that’s nothing; but if you raise your hand that God is your witness, that’s serious’? What ridiculous hairsplitting! What difference does it make whether you shake hands or raise hands? A promise is a promise. What difference does it make if you make your promise inside or outside a house of worship? A promise is a promise. God is present, watching and holding you to account regardless.*

*“You’re hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You keep meticulous account books, tithing on every nickel and dime you get, but on the meat of God’s Law, things like fairness and compassion and commitment—the absolute basics!—you carelessly take it or leave it. Careful bookkeeping is commendable, but the basics are required. Do you have any idea how silly you look, writing a life story that’s wrong from start to finish, nitpicking over commas and semicolons?*

*“You’re hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You burnish the surface of your cups and bowls so they sparkle in the sun, while the insides are maggoty with your greed and gluttony. Stupid Pharisee! Scour the insides, and then the gleaming surface will mean something.*

*“You’re hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You’re like manicured grave plots, grass clipped and the flowers bright, but six feet down it’s all rotting bones and worm-eaten flesh. People look at you and think you’re saints, but beneath the skin you’re total frauds.*

*“You’re hopeless, you religion scholars and Pharisees! Frauds! You build granite tombs for your prophets and marble monuments for your saints. And you say that if you had lived in the days of your ancestors, no blood would have been on your hands. You protest too much! You’re cut from the same cloth as those murderers, and daily add to the death count.*

*“Snakes! Reptilian sneaks! Do you think you can worm your way out of this? Never have to pay the piper? It’s on account of people like you that I send prophets and wise guides and scholars generation after generation—and generation after generation you treat them like dirt, greeting them with lynch mobs, hounding them with abuse.*

*“You can’t squirm out of this: Every drop of righteous blood ever spilled on this earth, beginning with the blood of that good man Abel right down to the blood of Zechariah, Barachiah’s son, whom you murdered at his prayers, is on your head. All this, I’m telling you, is coming down on you, on your generation.*

*“Jerusalem! Jerusalem! Murderer of prophets! Killer of the ones who brought you God’s news! How often I’ve ached to embrace your children, the way a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you wouldn’t let me. And now you’re so desolate, nothing but a ghost town. What is there left to say? Only this: I’m out of here soon. The next time you see me you’ll say, ‘Oh, God has blessed him! He’s come, bringing God’s rule!’”  
[Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Mt 23:13–39). Colorado Springs, CO: NavPress.]*

Keep in mind that the term “hypocrite” is defined in the following passages as “trusting in privileges”, meaning franchises: Jer 7:4; Mt 3:9.



Jesus kept Himself unspotted from the world by not choosing a domicile there. The phrase “nowhere to lay His head” in the following passage is synonymous with a legal home or domicile.

### **The Cost of Discipleship**

*And when Jesus saw great multitudes about Him, He gave a command to depart to the other side. Then a certain scribe came and said to Him, “Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go.”*

*And Jesus said to him, “Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay His head.”*  
[Matt. 8:18-20, Bible, NKJV]

*“If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because you are not of [domiciled within] the world, but I [Jesus] chose you [believers] out of the world, therefore the world hates you. Remember the word that I said to you, ‘A [public] servant is not greater than his [Sovereign] master.’ If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also [as trustees of the public trust]. But all these things they will do to you for My name’s sake, because they do not know Him [God] who sent Me.”*  
[Jesus in John 15:19-21, Bible, NKJV]

It is perhaps because of the content of this section that Jesus was widely regarded as an “anarchist”. See:

*Jesus Is An Anarchist*, James Redford

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/JesusAnarchist.htm>

## **9 Satan’s greatest sin was abusing “privileges” and “franchises” to make himself equal to or above God**

In the previous section, we showed how Christ refused privileges, benefits, and franchises and insisted on equality towards every other human. In this chapter, we compare that approach to Satan’s approach. It should interest the Christian reader to know that Satan’s greatest sin in the Bible was to abuse the “privileges” and therefore franchises bestowed by God to try to elevate himself to an equal or superior relation to God. By doing so, he insisted on being above every other creation of God, including humans. He did this out of pride, vanity, conceit, and covetousness.

Satan abused the “benefits” of the Bible franchise to try to become superior rather than remain equal to all other humans or believers. Below is what one commentary amazingly says on the subject:

### **WHAT WAS SATAN’S SIN?**

*Satan’s sin was done from a privileged position. He was not a deprived creature who had not drunk deeply of the blessings of God before he sinned. Indeed, Ezekiel 28:11–15 declares some astounding things about the privileged position in which he sinned. That this passage has Satan in view seems most likely if one eliminates the idea that it is a mythical tale of heathen origin and if one takes the language at all plainly and not merely as filled with Oriental exaggerations. Ezekiel “saw the work and activity of Satan, whom the king of Tyre was emulating in so many ways.” Satan’s privileges included (1) full measure of wisdom (v. 12), (2) perfection in beauty (v. 12), (3) dazzling appearance (v. 13), (4) a place of special prominence as the anointed cherub that covered God’s throne (v. 14). Verse 15 (ASV) says all that the Bible says about the origin of sin—“till unrighteousness was found in thee.” It is clear, however, that Satan was not created as an evil being, for the verse clearly declares he was perfect when created. Furthermore, God did not make him sin; he sinned of his own volition and assumed full responsibility for that sin; and because of his great privileges, it is obvious that Satan sinned with full knowledge.*

*Satan’s sin was pride (1 Ti 3:6). The specific details of how that pride erupted are given in Isaiah 14:13–14 and are summarized in the assertion, “I will be like the most High” (v. 14).*  
[Ryrie, C. C. (1972). A survey of Bible doctrine. Chicago: Moody Press]

Christ’s greatest glory, on the other hand, was to do the OPPOSITE of Satan in this regard:

1. Jesus made his own desires and flesh “invisible” and became an agent and fiduciary of God 24 hours a day, 7 days a week:

1 ““Whoever receives this little child in My name receives Me; and whoever receives Me receives Him who sent  
2 Me. For he who is least among you all will be great.””  
3 [Luke 9:48, Bible, NKJV]

4 “Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless not My will, but Yours, be done.”  
5 [Luke 22:42, Bible, NKJV]

6 “And the Father Himself, who sent Me, has testified of Me. You have neither heard His voice at any time, nor  
7 seen His form.”  
8 [John 5:37, Bible, NKJV]

9 “For I have come down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him who sent Me.”  
10 [John 6:38, Bible, NKJV]

11 “Then Jesus cried out and said, “He who believes in Me, believes not in Me but in Him who sent Me.”  
12 [John 12:44, Bible, NKJV]

- 13 2. Jesus did NOT abuse the “privileges”, “franchises”, or “benefits” of God to elevate himself in importance or “rights”  
14 either above any other human or above God:

15 “Think of yourselves the way Christ Jesus thought of himself. He had equal status with God but didn’t think so  
16 much of himself that he had to cling to the advantages of that status no matter what. Not at all. When the  
17 time came, he set aside the privileges of deity and took on the status of a slave, became human! Having  
18 become human, he stayed human. It was an incredibly humbling process. He didn’t claim special privileges.  
19 Instead, he lived a selfless, obedient life and then died a selfless, obedient death—and the worst kind of death  
20 at that—a crucifixion.”

21 “Because of that obedience, God lifted him high and honored him far beyond anyone or anything, ever, so  
22 that all created beings in heaven and on earth—even those long ago dead and buried—will bow in worship  
23 before this Jesus Christ, and call out in praise that he is the Master of all, to the glorious honor of God the  
24 Father.”

25 [Peterson, E. H. (2005). The Message: the Bible in contemporary language (Php 2:5–11). Colorado Springs,  
26 CO: NavPress]

27 Basically, Jesus had a servant’s heart and required the same heart of all those who intend to lead others in government:

28 “But you, do not be called ‘Rabbi’; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. Do not call  
29 anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. And do not be called teachers; for  
30 One is your Teacher, the Christ. But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whoever exalts  
31 himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted”.  
32 [Jesus in Matt. 23:8-12, Bible, NKJV]

33 But Jesus called them to Himself and said to them, “You know that those who are considered rulers over the  
34 Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you;  
35 but whoever desires to become great among you shall be your servant. And whoever of you desires to be first  
36 shall be slave of all. For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a  
37 ransom for many.”  
38 [Mark 10:42–45, Bible, NKJV. See also Matt. 20:25-28]

39 Those in government who follow the above admonition in fact are implementing what the U.S. Supreme Court called “a  
40 society of law and not men” in Marbury v. Madison. The law is the will of the people in written form. Those who put that  
41 law above their own self-interest and execute it faithfully are:

- 42 1. Agents and/or officers of We the People.  
43 2. “Trustees” and managers over God’s property. The entire Earth belongs to the Lord, according to the Bible.<sup>6</sup>  
44 3. Acting in a fiduciary duty towards those who have entrusted them with power.

45 “As expressed otherwise, the powers delegated to a public officer are held in trust for the people and are to be  
46 exercised in behalf of the government or of all citizens who may need the intervention of the officer.”<sup>7</sup>  
47 Furthermore, the view has been expressed that all public officers, within whatever branch and whatever level  
48 of government, and whatever be their private vocations, are trustees of the people, and accordingly labor

<sup>6</sup> “Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the LORD your God, also the earth with all that is in it.” [Deut. 10:15, Bible, NKJV]

<sup>7</sup> State ex rel. Nagle v. Sullivan, 98 Mont. 425, 40 P.2d. 995, 99 A.L.R. 321; Jersey City v. Hague, 18 N.J. 584, 115 A.2d. 8.

under every disability and prohibition imposed by law upon trustees relative to the making of personal financial gain from a discharge of their trusts.<sup>8</sup> That is, a public officer occupies a fiduciary relationship to the political entity on whose behalf he or she serves.<sup>9</sup> and owes a fiduciary duty to the public.<sup>10</sup> It has been said that the fiduciary responsibilities of a public officer cannot be less than those of a private individual.<sup>11</sup> Furthermore, it has been stated that any enterprise undertaken by the public official which tends to weaken public confidence and undermine the sense of security for individual [PRIVATE] rights is against public policy.<sup>12</sup><sup>12</sup>

[63C American Jurisprudence 2d, Public Officers and Employees, §247 (1999)]

4. Implementing a “covenant” or “contract” or “social compact” between them and the people. All civil and common law is based on compact.<sup>13</sup>
5. “Creatures [CREATIONS] of the law” as the U.S. Supreme Court calls them.<sup>14</sup>
6. Violating their oath and/or covenant if they use the property or rights they are managing or protecting for any aspect of private gain. In fact, 18 U.S.C. §208 makes it a crime to preside over a matter that you have a financial conflict of interest in.

All of the people in the Bible that God got most excited about were doing the above. There are many verses like those below:

1. Lev. 25:42:

“For they are My servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves.”

2. Lev. 25:55:

“For the children of Israel are servants to Me; they are My servants whom I brought out of the land of Egypt: I am the LORD your God.”

3. Numbers 14:24:

“But My servant Caleb, because he has a different spirit in him and has followed Me fully, I will bring into the land where he went, and his descendants shall inherit it.”

4. Joshua 1:2-5:

“Moses My servant is dead. Now therefore, arise, go over this Jordan, you and all this people, to the land which I am giving to them—the children of Israel. Every place that the sole of your foot will tread upon I have given you, as I said to Moses. From the wilderness and this Lebanon as far as the great river, the River Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and to the Great Sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your territory. No man shall be able to stand before you all the days of your life; as I was with Moses, so I will be with you. I will not leave you nor forsake you.”

<sup>8</sup> Georgia Dep’t of Human Resources v. Sistrunk, 249 Ga. 543, 291 S.E.2d. 524. A public official is held in public trust. Madlener v. Finley (1st Dist), 161 Ill.App.3d. 796, 113 Ill.Dec. 712, 515 N.E.2d. 697, app gr 117 Ill.Dec. 226, 520 N.E.2d. 387 and revd on other grounds 128 Ill.2d. 147, 131 Ill.Dec. 145, 538 N.E.2d. 520.

<sup>9</sup> Chicago Park Dist. v. Kenroy, Inc., 78 Ill.2d. 555, 37 Ill.Dec. 291, 402 N.E.2d. 181, appeal after remand (1st Dist) 107 Ill.App.3d. 222, 63 Ill.Dec. 134, 437 N.E.2d. 783.

<sup>10</sup> United States v. Holzer (CA7 Ill), 816 F.2d. 304 and vacated, remanded on other grounds 484 U.S. 807, 98 L.Ed. 2d 18, 108 S.Ct. 53, on remand (CA7 Ill) 840 F.2d. 1343, cert den 486 U.S. 1035, 100 L.Ed. 2d 608, 108 S.Ct. 2022 and (criticized on other grounds by United States v. Osser (CA3 Pa) 864 F.2d. 1056) and (superseded by statute on other grounds as stated in United States v. Little (CA5 Miss) 889 F.2d. 1367) and (among conflicting authorities on other grounds noted in United States v. Boylan (CA1 Mass), 898 F.2d. 230, 29 Fed.Rules.Evid.Serv. 1223).

<sup>11</sup> Chicago ex rel. Cohen v. Keane, 64 Ill.2d. 559, 2 Ill.Dec. 285, 357 N.E.2d. 452, later proceeding (1st Dist) 105 Ill.App.3d. 298, 61 Ill.Dec. 172, 434 N.E.2d. 325.

<sup>12</sup> Indiana State Ethics Comm’n v. Nelson (Ind App), 656 N.E.2d. 1172, reh gr (Ind App) 659 N.E.2d. 260, reh den (Jan 24, 1996) and transfer den (May 28, 1996).

<sup>13</sup> “A body politic,” as aptly defined in the preamble of the Constitution of Massachusetts, “is a social compact by which the whole people covenants with each citizen, and each citizen with the whole people, that all shall be governed by certain laws for the common good.” [United States v. Winstar Corp. 518 U.S. 839 (1996) ]

<sup>14</sup> “No man in this country is so high that he is above the law. No officer of the law may set that law at defiance with impunity. All the officers of the government, from the highest to the lowest, are **creatures of the law**, and are bound to obey it.” [United States v. Lee, 106 U. S., at 220]

1 5. 2 Sam. 3:18:

2 “Now then, do it! For the LORD has spoken of David, saying, ‘By the hand of **My servant David**, I will save My  
3 people Israel from the hand of the Philistines and the hand of all their enemies.’”

4 6. 2 Sam. 7:8-9:

5 “Now therefore, thus shall you say to **My servant David**, ‘Thus says the LORD of hosts: “I took you from the  
6 sheepfold, from following the sheep, to be ruler over My people, over Israel. And I have been with you  
7 wherever you have gone, and have cut off all your enemies from before you, and have made you a great name,  
8 like the name of the great men who are on the earth.”’

9 God also said that you shall NOT abuse your power or commerce generally to enslave or coerce anyone:

10 **‘If one of your brethren becomes poor [desperate], and falls into poverty among you, then you shall help**  
11 **him, like a stranger or a sojourner, that he may live with you.**

12 **Take no usury or interest from him**; but fear your God, that your brother may live with you.

13 **You shall not lend him your money for usury, nor lend him your food at a profit.**

14 I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan and to be  
15 your God.

16 **‘And if one of your brethren who dwells by you becomes poor, and sells himself to you, you shall not compel**  
17 **him to serve as a slave.**

18 As a hired servant and a sojourner he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the Year of Jubilee.

19 And then he shall depart from you—he and his children with him—and shall return to his own family. He shall  
20 return to the possession of his fathers.

21 **For they are My servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves.**

22 You shall not rule over him with rigor, but you shall fear your God.  
23 [Lev. 25:35-43, Bible, NKJV]

24 Note above that it says that people who are poor or desperate should be treated not as slaves, but as “sojourners”, which  
25 today means “nonresidents” and “transient foreigners”. This is exactly the condition that our members are required to have.

26 The most famous example in the Bible of the violation of the above prohibition against usury was how Pharaoh used a  
27 famine to enslave his entire country, including the Israelites. See Gen. 47:13-26:

28 **Joseph Deals with the Famine**

29 <sup>13</sup> Now there was no bread in all the land; for the famine was very severe, so that the land of Egypt and the land  
30 of Canaan languished because of the famine. <sup>14</sup> And Joseph gathered up all the money that was found in the  
31 land of Egypt and in the land of Canaan, for the grain which they bought; and Joseph brought the money into  
32 Pharaoh’s house.

33 <sup>15</sup> So when the money failed in the land of Egypt and in the land of Canaan, all the Egyptians came to Joseph  
34 and said, “Give us bread, for why should we die in your presence? For the money has failed.”

35 <sup>16</sup> Then Joseph said, “Give your livestock, and I will give you bread for your livestock, if the money is gone.” <sup>17</sup>  
36 So they brought their livestock to Joseph, and Joseph gave them bread in exchange for the horses, the flocks,  
37 the cattle of the herds, and for the donkeys. Thus he fed them with bread in exchange for all their livestock that  
38 year.

39 <sup>18</sup> When that year had ended, they came to him the next year and said to him, “We will not hide from my lord  
40 that our money is gone; my lord also has our herds of livestock. There is nothing left in the sight of my lord but  
41 our bodies and our lands. <sup>19</sup> Why should we die before your eyes, both we and our land? Buy us and our land  
42 for bread, and we and our land will be servants of Pharaoh; give us seed, that we may live and not die, that the  
43 land may not be desolate.”

<sup>20</sup> Then Joseph bought all the land of Egypt for Pharaoh; for every man of the Egyptians sold his field, because the famine was severe upon them. So the land became Pharaoh's. <sup>21</sup> And as for the people, he moved them into the cities, from one end of the borders of Egypt to the other end. <sup>22</sup> Only the land of the priests he did not buy; for the priests had rations allotted to them by Pharaoh, and they ate their rations which Pharaoh gave them; therefore they did not sell their lands.

<sup>23</sup> Then Joseph said to the people, "Indeed I have bought you and your land this day for Pharaoh. Look, here is seed for you, and you shall sow the land. <sup>24</sup> And it shall come to pass in the harvest that you shall give one-fifth to Pharaoh. Four-fifths shall be your own, as seed for the field and for your food, for those of your households and as food for your little ones."

<sup>25</sup> So they said, "You have saved our lives; let us find favor in the sight of my lord, and we will be Pharaoh's servants." <sup>26</sup> And Joseph made it a law over the land of Egypt to this day, that Pharaoh should have one-fifth, except for the land of the priests only, which did not become Pharaoh's.  
[Gen. 47:13-26, Bible, NKJV]

Eventually, God liberated the Israelites in the famous story of Moses' exodus out of Egypt, but not before he brought a series of curses on Pharaoh for his usury in Exodus 4. Another similar source of usury was the Canaanites in the Bible, if you wish to investigate further. It is very interesting that the above history of usury occurred in the land of Canaan for that very reason. We talk about this subject at length in:

Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030, Section 22.4  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

It is interesting to note that the main political objection that most Muslim countries have to the United States is related to usury created by the abuse of commerce. The Koran forbids lending money at interest. Libya and Iraq both became the target of war and intervention because they wanted to abandon the Federal Reserve fiat currency system and implement gold instead of paper money. Muslims refer to this usury as "imperialism" and literally hate it. Iran's own leader calls for "death to America" and usury is the main reason he does so. There is no question that the abuse of commerce to create inequality, servitude, and usury is satanic because the Bible says this was the essence of Satan's greatest sin. The Muslims are correct to PEACEFULLY protest it and oppose it.

*"You were the seal of perfection,  
Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.  
<sup>13</sup> You were in Eden, the garden of God;  
Every precious stone was your covering:  
The sardius, topaz, and diamond,  
Beryl, onyx, and jasper,  
Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold.  
The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes  
Was prepared for you on the day you were created.*

*<sup>14</sup> "You were the anointed cherub who covers;  
I established you;  
You were on the holy mountain of God;  
You walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones.  
<sup>15</sup> You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created,  
Till iniquity was found in you.*

*<sup>16</sup> **"By the abundance of your trading  
You became filled with violence within,  
And you sinned;  
Therefore I cast you as a profane thing  
Out of the mountain of God;  
And I destroyed you, O covering cherub,  
From the midst of the fiery stones.***

*<sup>17</sup> "Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty;  
You corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor;  
I cast you to the ground,  
I laid you before kings,  
That they might gaze at you.*

*<sup>18</sup> **"You defiled your sanctuaries  
By the multitude of your iniquities,***



1 By the iniquity of your trading;  
2 Therefore I brought fire from your midst;  
3 It devoured you,  
4 And I turned you to ashes upon the earth  
5 In the sight of all who saw you.  
6 <sup>19</sup> All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you;  
7 You have become a horror,  
8 And shall be no more forever. ”””  
9 [Ezekiel 28:13-19, Bible, NKJV]

10 That is not to say that we condone the use of violence or terrorism to oppose usury, however. More peaceful means are  
11 available, and especially that of withdrawing our domicile and sponsorship of usurious governments and becoming non-  
12 resident non-persons. We talk about this approach in:

Why Domicile and Becoming a “Taxpayer” Require Your Consent, Form #05.002  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

13 We conclude in the above document that the only way that changing domicile and thereby removing funding and civil  
14 jurisdiction from the government can result in violence is if the government actively interferes with you receiving the  
15 “benefits” of doing so. When they do that, violence, revolution, anarchy, and even war is inevitable eventually.

16 We refer to the systematic implementation of usury as the greatest sin of our present government because it was Satan’s  
17 greatest sin. The Federal Reserve counterfeiting franchise is its foundation. We describe the government as an economic  
18 terrorist, the District of Columbia as the District of Criminals, and politicians as criminals because of it. It’s all based on  
19 “the love of money”:

20 *“For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their*  
21 *greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.”*  
22 [1 Tim. 6:10, Bible, NKJV]

23 It is our sincere belief that if we as a country had stuck to the requirements of Lev. 25:35-43 earlier in our external relations,  
24 the problems we have with terrorism from foreign nations could be significantly reduced. The United States commits usury  
25 and economic terrorism against foreign countries, so they reciprocate with violent terrorism, but both types of terrorism are  
26 equally evil. The economic interventionism and the coercion that the usury leads to is a direct violation of the requirements  
27 of justice itself. “Justice” is legally defined as the right to be left alone. If we want to be “left alone” by the terrorists and  
28 treated with respect, then we have to quit meddling in their affairs, invading and bombing their countries mainly for  
29 economic reasons, or using our economic might to coerce them with sanctions. You will always reap what you sow.

30 The United States as a country sows economic violence so we reap physical violence. This is the inevitable consequence of  
31 the fact that we are all equal and any attempt to make us unequal inevitably produces wars, violence, anarchy, and political  
32 instability:

33 *“Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them, for this is the Law and the Prophets.”*  
34 [Matt. 7:12, Bible, NKJV]

35 The U.S. Supreme Court stated the above slightly differently, when they declared the first income tax unconstitutional,  
36 which was implemented as a franchise tax that discriminated against one class of people at the expense of another and  
37 therefore, produced INEQUALITY:

38 “The income tax law under consideration is marked by discriminating features which affect the whole law. It  
39 discriminates between those who receive an income of four thousand dollars and those who do not. It thus  
40 vitiate, in my judgment, by this arbitrary discrimination, the whole legislation. Hamilton says in one of his  
41 papers, (the Continentalist,) “the genius of liberty reprobates everything arbitrary or discretionary in taxation.  
42 It exacts that every man, by a definite and general rule, should know what proportion of his property the State  
43 demands; whatever liberty we may boast of in theory, it cannot exist in fact while [arbitrary] assessments  
44 continue.” 1 Hamilton's Works, ed. 1885, 270. The legislation, in the discrimination it makes, is class  
45 legislation. Whenever a distinction is made in the burdens a law imposes or in the benefits it confers on any  
46 citizens by reason of their birth, or wealth, or religion, it is class legislation, and leads inevitably to  
47 oppression and abuses, and to general unrest and disturbance in society [e.g. wars, political conflict,  
48 violence, anarchy]. It was hoped and believed that the great amendments to the Constitution which followed the  
49 late civil war had rendered such legislation impossible for all future time. But the objectionable legislation  
50 reappears in the act under consideration. It is the same in essential character as that of the English income

statute of 1691, which taxed Protestants at a certain rate, Catholics, as a class, at double the rate of Protestants, and Jews at another and separate rate. Under wise and constitutional legislation every citizen should contribute his proportion, however small the sum, to the support of the government, and it is no kindness to urge any of our citizens to escape from that obligation. If he contributes the smallest mite of his earnings to that purpose he will have a greater regard for the government and more self-respect 597\*597 for himself feeling that though he is poor in fact, he is not a pauper of his government. And it is to be hoped that, whatever woes and embarrassments may betide our people, they may never lose their manliness and self-respect. Those qualities preserved, they will ultimately triumph over all reverses of fortune."

[. . .]

"Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity that go down to the very foundation of the government. If the provisions of the Constitution can be set aside by an act of Congress, where is the course of usurpation to end? **The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but the stepping-stone to others, larger and more sweeping, till our political contests will become a war of the poor against the rich; a war constantly growing in intensity and bitterness.**"

**"If the court sanctions the power of discriminating taxation, and nullifies the uniformity mandate of the Constitution," as said by one who has been all his life a student of our institutions, "it will mark the hour when the sure decadence of our present government will commence."** If the purely arbitrary limitation of \$4000 in the present law can be sustained, none having less than that amount of income being assessed or taxed for the support of the government, the limitation of future Congresses may be fixed at a much larger sum, at five or ten or twenty thousand dollars, parties possessing an income of that amount alone being bound to bear the burdens of government; or the limitation may be designated at such an amount as a board of "walking delegates" may deem necessary. There is no safety in allowing the limitation to be adjusted except in strict compliance with the mandates of the Constitution which require its taxation, if imposed by direct taxes, to be apportioned among the States according to their representation, and if imposed by indirect taxes, to be uniform in operation and, so far as practicable, in proportion to their property, equal upon all citizens. **Unless the rule of the Constitution governs, a majority may fix the limitation at such rate as will not include any of their own number."**

[Pollock v. Farmers' Loan & Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (Supreme Court 1895)]

We talk about our opposition to usurious commerce that produces inequality in our Disclaimer, Section 9:

#### **SEDM Disclaimer**

#### **9. APPROACH TOWARDS "HATE SPEECH" AND HATE CRIME**

This website does not engage in, condone, or support [hate speech](#) or hate crimes, violent thoughts, deeds or actions against any particular person(s), group, entity, government, mob, paramilitary force, intelligence agency, overpaid politician, head of state, queen, dignitary, ambassador, spy, spook, soldier, bowl cook, security flunky, contractor, dog, cat or mouse, Wal-Mart employee, amphibian, reptile, and or deceased entity without a PB (Physical Body). By "hate speech" and "hate crime", we mean in the context of religious members of this site trying to practice their faith:

1. Compelling members to violate any aspect of the [Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001](#). This includes commanding them to do things God forbids or preventing or punishing them from doing God commands.
2. Persecution or "selective enforcement" directed against those whose religious beliefs forbid them from contracting with, doing business with, or acquiring any civil status in relation to any and all governments. These people must be "left alone" by law and are protected in doing so by the First Amendment and the right to NOT contract protected by the Constitution. The group they refuse to associate with is civil statutory "persons". We call these people "non-resident non-persons" on this site as described in [Form #05.020](#). See [Proof That There Is a "Straw Man", Form #05.042](#) for a description of the civil "person" scam.
3. Engaging in [legal "injustice" \(Form #05.050\)](#). By "justice" we mean [absolutely owned private property \(Form #10.002\)](#), and [equality of TREATMENT and OPPORTUNITY \(Form #05.033\)](#) under [REAL LAW \(Form #05.048\)](#). "Justice" is defined here as God defines it in [Form #05.050](#).
4. Any attempt to treat anyone unequally under REAL "law". This includes punishing or preventing actions by members to enforce against governments under [their own franchise \(Form #06.027\)](#) the same way governments enforce against them. See [What is "law"?, Form #05.048](#).
5. Offering, implementing, or enforcing any [civil franchise \(Form #05.030\)](#). This enforces superior powers on the part of the government as a form of inequality, results in religious idolatry, and violates the First Commandment of the Ten Commandments (Exodus 20). This includes:
  - 5.1 Making [justice \(Form #05.050\)](#) into a civil public privilege
  - 5.2 Turning CONSTITUTIONAL PRIVATE citizens into STATUTORY PUBLIC citizens

engaged in a public office and a franchise.  
5.3 Any attempt to impose equality of OUTCOME by law, such as by abusing taxing powers to redistribute wealth. See [Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302](#).  
Franchises are the main method of introducing UNEQUAL treatment by the government. See [Why You are a Political Citizen but Civil Non-Citizen, National, and Nonresident Alien, Form #05.006](#).

6. Any attempt to outlaw or refuse to recognize or enforce [absolutely owned private property \(Form #12.025\)](#). This makes everyone into slaves of the government, which then ultimately owns ALL property and can place unlimited conditions upon the use of their property. It also violates the last six commandments of the Ten Commandments, which are the main religious laws that protect PRIVATE property and prevent it from being shared with any government. This includes:
  - 6.1 Refusing to provide civil statuses on government forms that recognize those who are exclusively private and their right to be left alone.
  - 6.2 Refusing to provide government forms that recognize those who are exclusively private such as "nontaxpayers" or "non-resident non-persons" and their right to be left alone.The result of the above forms of omission are hate, discrimination, and selective enforcement against those who refuse to become "customers" or franchisees ([Form #05.030](#)) of government. See [Avoiding Traps in Government Forms, Form #12.023](#).
7. Any attempt by government to use judicial process or administrative enforcement to enforce any civil obligation derived from any source OTHER than express written consent or to an injury against the equal rights of others demonstrated with court admissible evidence. See [Lawfully Avoiding Government Obligations, Form #12.040](#).

There is no practical difference between discriminating against or targeting people because of the groups they claim membership in and punishing them for refusing to consent to join a group subject to legal disability, such as those participating in government franchises. Members of such DISABILITY groups include civil statutory "persons", "taxpayers", "individuals" (under the tax code), "drivers" (under the vehicle code), "spouses" (under the family code). Both approaches lead to the same result: discrimination and selective enforcement. The government claims an exemption from being a statutory "person", and since it is a government of delegated powers, the people who gave it that power must ALSO be similarly exempt:

"The sovereignty of a state does not reside in the persons who fill the different departments of its government, but in the People, from whom the government emanated; and they may change it at their discretion. Sovereignty, then in this country, abides with the constituency, and not with the agent; and this remark is true, both in reference to the federal and state government."  
[*Spooner v. McConnell*, 22 F. 939, 943]

"In common usage, the term 'person' does not include the sovereign, and statutes employing the word are ordinarily construed to exclude it."  
[*Wilson v. Omaha Indian Tribe* 442 U.S. 653, 667 (1979)]

"Since in common usage the term 'person' does not include the sovereign, statutes employing that term are ordinarily construed to exclude it."  
[*U.S. v. Cooper*, 312 U.S. 600, 604, 61 S.Ct. 742 (1941)]

"In common usage, the term 'person' does not include the sovereign and statutes employing it will ordinarily not be construed to do so."  
[*U.S. v. Cooper*, 312 U.S. 600, 604, 61 S.Ct. 742 (1941)]

"There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States .... In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it: All else is withheld."  
[*Julliard v. Greenman*, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)]

The foundation of the religious beliefs and practices underlying this website is a refusal to:

1. Civilly or legally associate with any specific secular (pagan) government ([Form #05.002](#)) under their statutory franchises or "social compacts".
2. Acquire any "civil status" under any civil statutory enactment, including but not limited to "person", "individual", "taxpayer", "U.S. person", etc. See: [Your Exclusive Right to Declare or Establish Your Civil Status, Form #13.008](#).
3. Approach any government as a Buyer of their services or programs ([Form #05.001](#)) under [U.C.C. §2-103\(1\)\(a\)](#).

4. Be anything OTHER than a Merchant selling absolutely owned, constitutionally protected private property under [U.C.C. §2-104](#)(1) under terms that only WE specify. The terms of the sale are specified in the [Injury Defense Franchise and Agreement, Form #06.027](#).

*"For the Lord your God will bless you just as He promised you; you shall lend to many nations [governments and their officers], but you shall not borrow; you shall reign [civilly] over many nations, but they shall not reign [civilly] over you."  
[Deut. 15:6, Bible, NKJV]*

*The ability to do the above is protected by the U.S. Constitution and the First Amendment. In theological terms, it is called "sanctification", meaning "set apart for a purpose", and that purpose is to worship and serve ONLY God, rather than His competitor, which is Government. We describe and define people who obey Biblical limitations giving rise to the above as "Non-Resident Non-Persons", "[stateless](#)" (in relation to the national but not state government), "[foreign](#)", or "[sovereign](#)" as described in [Non-Resident Non-Person Position, Form #05.020](#). Black's Law Dictionary defines "commerce" as "intercourse".*

*"Commerce. ...[Intercourse](#) by way of trade and traffic [money instead of semen] between different peoples or states and the citizens or inhabitants thereof, including not only the purchase, sale, and exchange of commodities, but also the instrumentalities [governments] and agencies by which it is promoted and the means and appliances by which it is carried on..."  
[Black's Law Dictionary, Sixth Edition, p. 269]*

*Hence this website advocates a religious refusal to engage in sex or intercourse or commerce with any government. In fact, the Bible even describes people who VIOLATE this prohibition as "playing the harlot" ([Ezekiel 16:41](#)) and personifies that harlot as "Babylon the Great Harlot" ([Rev. 17:5](#)), which is fornicating with the Beast, which it defines as governments ([Rev. 19:19](#)).*

*I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I swore to your fathers; and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And you shall make no covenant [[contract or franchise or agreement of ANY kind](#)] with the inhabitants of this [corrupt pagan] land; you shall tear down their [[man/government worshipping socialist](#)] altars.' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?*

*"Therefore I also said, 'I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as thorns [[terrorists and persecutors](#)] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!] to you.'"*

*So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voices and wept.  
[[Judges 2:1-4](#), Bible, NKJV]*

*"The king establishes the land by justice, But he who receives bribes [socialist or franchise handouts] overthrows it."  
[Prov. 29:4, Bible, NKJV]*

*"Many seek the ruler's favor [[franchises and privileges, Form #05.030](#)], But justice for man comes from the Lord."  
[Prov. 29:26, Bible, NKJV]*

*"Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend [[citizen](#)", "[resident](#)", "[taxpayer](#)", "[inhabitant](#)", or "subject" under a king or political ruler] of the world [or any man-made kingdom other than God's Kingdom] makes himself an enemy of God."  
[[James 4:4](#), Bible, NKJV]*

*"You shall make no covenant [[contract or franchise](#)] with them [[foreigners, pagans](#)], nor with their [[pagan government](#)] gods [laws or judges]. They shall not dwell in your land [and you shall not dwell in theirs [by becoming a "resident" in the process of contracting with them](#)], lest they make you sin against Me [God]. For if you serve their gods [under [contract or agreement or franchise](#)], it will surely be a snare to you."  
[[Exodus 23:32-33](#), Bible, NKJV]*

---

"Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world [the obligations and concerns of the world]."  
[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]

---

"You shall have no other gods [including political rulers, governments, or Earthly laws] before Me [or My commandments]."  
[Exodus 20:3, Bible, NKJV]

---

"Then all the elders of Israel gathered together and came to Samuel [the priest in a Theocracy] at Ramah, and said to him, 'Look, you [the priest within a theocracy] are old, and your sons do not walk in your ways. Now make us a king [or political ruler] to judge us like all the nations [and be OVER them]'.

"But the thing displeased Samuel when they said, 'Give us a king [or political ruler] to judge us.' So Samuel prayed to the Lord. And the Lord said to Samuel, 'Heed the voice of the people in all that they say to you; for they have rejected Me [God], that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt, even to this day—with which they have forsaken Me [God as their ONLY King, Lawgiver, and Judge] and served other gods—so they are doing to you also [government or political rulers becoming the object of idolatry]."  
[1 Sam. 8:4-8, Bible, NKJV]

---

"Do not walk in the statutes of your fathers [the heathens], nor observe their judgments, nor defile yourselves with their [pagan government] idols. I am the LORD your God: Walk in My statutes, keep My judgments, and do them; hallow My Sabbaths, and they will be a sign between Me and you, that you may know that I am the LORD your God."  
[Ezekiel 20:10-20, Bible, NKJV]

Where is "separation of church and state" when you REALLY need it, keeping in mind that Christians AS INDIVIDUALS are "the church" and secular society is the "state" as legally defined? The John Birch Society agrees with us on the subject of not contracting with anyone in the following video:

Trading Away Your Freedom by Foreign Entanglements  
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2Q24tWlrRdk>

Pastor David Jeremiah of Turning Point Ministries also agrees with us on this subject:

The Church in Satan's City, March 20, 2016  
<https://youtu.be/oujXpO5pejQ>

President Obama also said that it is the right of EVERYONE to economically AND politically disassociate with the government so why don't the agencies of the government recognize this fact on EVERY form you use to interact with them?.

President Obama Says US Will NOT Impose Its Political or Economic System on Anyone, Exhibit #05.053  
[https://youtu.be/2t\\_ZROSIPr0](https://youtu.be/2t_ZROSIPr0)

We wrote an entire book on how to economically and politically disassociate in fulfillment of Obama's promise above, and yet the government hypocritically actively interferes with economically and politically disassociating, in defiance of President Obama's assurances and promises. HYPOCRITES!



Non-Resident Non-Person Position, Form #05.020



Government's tendency to compel everyone into a commercial or [civil legal relationship \(Form #05.002\)](#) with them is defined by the Bible as the ESSENCE of Satan himself! The personification of that evil is dramatized in the following video:

[Devil's Advocate: Lawyers](#)  
<https://sedm.org/what-we-are-up-against/>

Therefore, the religious practice and sexual orientation of avoiding commerce with governments is the essence of our religious faith:

"By the **abundance** of your [Satan's] **trading** You became filled with violence within,  
**And** you sinned; Therefore I cast you as a profane thing Out of the mountain of God;  
**And** I destroyed you, O covering cherub, From the midst of the fiery stones."  
[\[Ezekial 28:16\]](#), Bible, NKJV]

"As religion towards God is a branch of universal righteousness (he is not an honest man that is not devout), so **righteousness towards men is a branch of true religion, for he is not a godly man that is not honest, nor can he expect that his devotion should be accepted; for,**

**1. Nothing is more offensive to God than deceit in [commerce](#). A false balance is here put for all manner of unjust and fraudulent practices [of our public dis-servants] in dealing with any person [within the public], which are all an abomination to the Lord, and render those abominable [hated] to him that allow themselves in the use of such accursed arts of thriving. It is an affront to justice, which God is the patron of, as well as a wrong to our neighbour, whom God is the protector of. Men [in government] make light of such frauds, and think there is no sin in that which there is money to be got by, and, while it passes undiscovered, they cannot blame themselves for it; a blot is no blot till it is hit, Hos. 12:7, 8. But they are not the less an abomination to God, who will be the avenger of those that are defrauded by their brethren.**

**2. Nothing is more pleasing to God than fair and honest dealing, nor more necessary to make us and our devotions acceptable to him: A just weight is his delight. He himself goes by a just weight, and holds the scale of judgment with an even hand, and therefore is pleased with those that are herein followers of him.**

**A [false] balance, [[whether it be in the federal courtroom](#) or in the government or [in the marketplace](#),] cheats, under pretence of doing right most exactly, and therefore is the greater abomination to God."**  
[Matthew Henry's Commentary on the Whole Bible; Henry, M., 1996, c1991, under Prov. 11:1]

Any individual, group, or especially government worker that makes us the target of discrimination, violence, "selective enforcement", or hate because of this form of religious practice or "sexual orientation" or abstinence is practicing HATE SPEECH based BOTH on our religious beliefs AND our sexual orientation as legally defined. Furthermore, all readers and governments are given reasonable timely notice that the terms of use for the information and services available through this website mandate that any attempt to compel us into a commercial or tax relationship with any government shall constitute:

1. "purposeful avilment" in satisfaction of the [Foreign Sovereign Immunities Act, 28 U.S.C. Chapter 97](#).
2. A waiver of official, judicial, and sovereign immunity.
3. A commercial invasion within the meaning of Article 4, section 4 of the United States Constitution.
4. A tort cognizable as a Fifth Amendment taking without compensation.
5. A criminal attempt at identity theft by wrongfully associating us with a civil status of "citizen", "resident", "taxpayer", etc.
6. Duress as legally defined. See [Affidavit of Duress: Illegal Tax Enforcement by De Facto Officers, Form #02.005](#).
7. Express consent to the terms of this disclaimer.

The GOVERNMENT crimes documented on this website fall within the ambit of [18 U.S.C. §2381: Treason](#). The penalty mandated by law for these crimes is DEATH. We demand that actors in the Department of Justice for both the states and the federal government responsible for prosecuting these crimes of Treason do so as required by law. A FAILURE to do so is ALSO an act of Treason punishable by death. Since murder is not only a crime, but a violent crime, pursuant to [18 U.S.C. §1111](#), then the government itself can also be classified

as terrorist. It is also ludicrous to call people who demand the enforcement of the death penalty for the crimes documented as terrorists. If that were true, every jurist who sat on a murder trial in which the death penalty applied would also have to be classified as and prosecuted as a terrorist. Hypocrites.

For those members seeking to prosecute government actors practicing hate speech or hate crime against them as documented here, see the following resource:

Discrimination and Racism page, Section 5: Hate Speech and Hate Crime;  
[https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Discrimination/discrimination.htm#HATE\\_SPEECH](https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Discrimination/discrimination.htm#HATE_SPEECH)

The moral of the story is that the main difference between Christ and Satan was how they handled “privileges” and “franchises” and whether they tried to use them as a means to create inequality or usury or slavery or servitude between them and others while they were on the earth.

As we say repeatedly throughout this document, franchises are the main method used to destroy and undermine equality of all under the law. Any attempt to implement them in any governmental system is SATANIC and emulates Satan’s greatest sin. Those in government who institute or enforce franchises will therefore get the same punishment as Satan did for exactly the same reasons.

## 10 God’s remedy for socialism

The way to prevent socialism and a tyrannical government is through God’s Law of Tithe. Those who refuse to live under this law indirectly are insisting on tyrannical rulers and in effect are “lawless” as Jesus describes them.

*I Never Knew You*

*“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?’ And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!’”*  
[Matt. 7:23, Bible, NKJV]

God’s Law of Tithe is described in the following:

1. *Path to Freedom*, Form #09.015, Section 8.5  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
2. *SEDM Forums, Section 3.1: General Law: Are we missing a Key element?*  
<http://sedm.org/forums/topic/are-we-missing-a-key-element/>

The authorities described above appear after the line below. They appear as a dialog between us and an informed member. The dialog ends with another horizontal line:

For an interesting read containing this question, the answer, and the discussion surrounding it, see:

SEDM Forums, Section 3.1: General Law: Are we missing a Key element?  
<http://sedm.org/forums/topic/are-we-missing-a-key-element/>

### **QUESTION:**

Are we missing a key element here?

Just exiting the system is not enough. Who will take care of the elderly and needy and those who cannot care for themselves referred to as the poor, fatherless, and widows in the scriptures?

I want my liberty just as much as the next fella. I will not see that liberty, however, unless I am willing to set my neighbor at liberty and seek his liberty and welfare as much as I would/do seek my own. That is part of loving our neighbor as we love ourselves.

God, through Moses, set up a system of social welfare that operated on freewill offerings and charity. The Levites administered the free will offerings according to the needs of the people. They redistributed what was tithed or offered out of free will to the poor, fatherless, and widows. The free will offerings/tithes were called “burnt offerings”. They were burnt because once donated one relinquished all control over it and gave it completely to those deemed fit to administer the tithes according to their conscience before God. Metaphors.

The people were warned to not go back to the ways of Egypt. That “way” was where people elected authoritarian benefactors to exercise authority over their neighbor to compel them to contribute to their security and welfare like Jesus says here:

*And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.  
[Luk\_22:25, Bible]*

and here in Mark:

*But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.  
[Mar 10:42, Bible]*

Jesus said we are not to be like them. We are not to exercise authority over our neighbor to compel them to contribute. To compel our neighbor to contribute is the same as coveting our neighbors goods.

God did not just lead them out of Egypt to not pay taxes. He had another way in which to care for the needy and welfare of their society, called the kingdom of God. Jesus preached this kingdom just like John did alongside the prophets and apostles. This other way is based on faith, hope and charity under the perfect law of liberty. It uses free will or “burnt” offerings based on the faith of the people. Just “coming out” will not avail anything unless we have a way to care for one another just like John and Jesus said to do. Like God says to do.

Peace be with you

### **ANSWER:**

Thanks for raising that important point so that we can discuss it, because it is not often discussed in the Member Forums or our materials. You express yourself eloquently and your coverage of the subject is complete and praiseworthy. The rarity (but not absence) of discussing this important issue on our site appears to have created the false impression that we don't think about or haven't considered the issue.

This ministry and website is NOT missing this key element. It has already been addressed in our publications. If anyone is missing this element, it is the churches and the families who have this responsibility. Instead, they throw their own needy people to the government wolves instead of helping them personally. We cover this subject in SEDM About Us Page, Section 9, Item 1.6:

*1.6 That the family, and government, and church are God-ordained institution; and, that the family is the institution of education; that the government is the institution of justice; and that the Church is the institution of grace.  
[SOURCE: <http://sedm.org/Ministry/AboutUs.htm#9>. About religious tolerance and this ministry]*

We also discuss all the legal elements of this system of charity in:

Laws of the Bible, Litigation Tool #09.001, Section 3  
DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Litigation/09-Reference/LawsOfTheBible.pdf>

Look in the above under: Section VIII. Social Security and Welfare Laws

You are biblically correct on the subject of charity. On this subject:

1 1. Churches and families are the only place authorized by God to administer ANY system of charity. Not government.  
2 We call that charity “grace”. Governments are in charge of law/force/justice and churches and families are in charge of  
3 grace. The following scripture is an indirect reference to this requirement:

4 “But if anyone does not provide for his own, and especially for those of his household, he has denied the faith  
5 and is worse than an unbeliever.”  
6 [1 Tim. 5:8, NKJV;  
7 SOURCE: <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=1%20Timothy+5:8&version=NKJV>]

8 2. The ministry to people in need is a Christian duty that must be pursued WITH JOY. The Israelites were punished by  
9 God because they refused to approach this ministry with joy. By “joy” we believe is meant that they shouldn’t grumble  
10 about volunteering, tithing, or free will offerings that facilitate the VOLUNTARY system of charity. See:

11 <http://nikeinsights.famguardian.org/forums/topic/joy-going-for-an-oscar/>  
12 <http://sedm.org/why-be-happy/>

13 3. If churches and families REFUSE their duty to God to provide charity/grace to their members, then socialism will  
14 inevitably result. See:

<p><i>Socialism: The New American Civil Religion</i>, Form #05.016, Section 5.3 FORMS PAGE: <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm">http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm</a> DIRECT LINK: <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/SocialismCivilReligion.pdf">http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/SocialismCivilReligion.pdf</a></p>
--

15 4. When people refuse their duty to God to provide charity to families and churches, the government inevitably takes over  
16 this exclusive domain of families and churches and a totalitarian state will inevitably ensue. Licensure and franchises are  
17 the legal vehicles to create the totalitarianism. Social Security, FICA, etc, currently UNLAWFULLY fulfill this role in  
18 states of the Union, even though they cannot lawfully be offered there. These programs are supposed to be voluntary and  
19 no person in their right mind should volunteer because it will interfere with the exclusive domain of churches and families  
20 by STEALING the revenue that would fund these charity within families and churches. Tacitus, the famous Roman  
21 historian, said on this subject:

22 “The more corrupt the state, the more numerous the laws.”  
23 [Tacitus, Roman historian 55-117 A.D.;  
24 SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/taxfreedom/CitesByTopic/law.htm>]

25 The laws must become numerous because the people are corrupt, and the main type of corruption we are talking about here  
26 is selfishness and narcissism.

27 5. The democratic process under a government mandated charity system funded by taxation then becomes the means of  
28 control over charity and/or wealth redistribution. Political debates become needlessly polarized in this environment  
29 because people are fighting over the economic "benefits" and who should receive them. This corrupts the system because:

30 5.1. It violates the purpose of government to use the taxing power to pay private people or redistribute wealth.

31 5.2. It is a crime to bribe a jurist or voter, and therefore those who receive these economic benefits should not be allowed to  
32 serve as a jurist or vote.

33 5.3. Judges become criminals, because their pay is derived from these "benefits" and therefore they have an economic,  
34 personal, and financial conflict of interest that prevents them from judging righteously.

35 6. Even if people are willing to leave the franchise system and implement private charity, there is still much resistance that  
36 will inevitably come from those in government who lust for power. Putting all charity into the exclusive hands of families  
37 and churches takes SIGNIFICANT political and economic power away from civil rulers. They are not likely to give up that  
38 power without significant resistance.

39 7. We tell people that when they leave the franchise and public charity system, they should take the money they save from  
40 not paying taxes and use it to provide charity within their own churches and families, just as the bible requires. However,  
41 since the tax rates are higher than the ten percent tithe rates in the Bible, they would see a significant increase in disposable  
42 income by switching to God's mandates for charity.

1       *"We of this mighty western Republic have to grapple with the dangers that spring from popular self-government tried on a scale incomparably*  
2       *vaster than ever before in the history of mankind, and from an abounding material prosperity greater also than anything which the world has*  
3       *hitherto seen.*

4       *As regards the first set of dangers, it behooves us to remember that men can never escape being governed. Either they must govern*  
5       *themselves or they must submit to being governed by others. If from lawlessness or fickleness, from folly or self-indulgence, they refuse to*  
6       *govern themselves then most assuredly in the end they will have to be governed from the outside. They can prevent the need of government*  
7       *from without only by showing they possess the power of government from within. A sovereign cannot make excuses for his failures; a*  
8       *sovereign must accept the responsibility for the exercise of power that inheres in him; and where, as is true in our Republic, the people are*  
9       *sovereign, then the people must show a sober understanding and a sane and steadfast purpose if they are to preserve that orderly liberty*  
10       *upon which as a foundation every republic must rest."*

11       *[President Theodore Roosevelt; Opening of the Jamestown Exposition; Norfolk, VA, April 26, 1907]*

12       8. We are not a church and we are not intended to take over the system of charity mandated by God for families and  
13       churches.

14       9. Our ministry operates consistent with the above premises because we tell people that if they pursue government charity  
15       or "benefits" or refuse to quit those systems, then they:

16       9.1. Should PAY for those benefits. If they don't, they are stealing, which makes them just as bad as the government.

17       9.2. Should not seek to avoid paying the "taxes" that pay for those benefits, but ONLY if they have not left the system and  
18       committed to NOT receiving said benefits.

19       10. Governments know the above. In fact, the Social Security System was modeled after a similar system of charity set up  
20       by the Mormons. The main difference between the government system and the Mormon system is that although both are  
21       SUPPOSED to be voluntary by law, the Social Security system for all intents and purposes is compelled because of the way  
22       that payroll deductions are forced through PRACTICE rather than law. That is why the current Social Security system and  
23       the tax system that piggy backs it is "de facto" rather than "de jure": because it uses force to turn something  
24       VOLUNTARY into something COMPELLED. See De Facto Government Scam, Form #05.043.

25       This FAQ section also helps deflect the main criticism against those who want to leave the franchise system, which is that  
26       they are selfish, anarchistic "pay-tri-ots for profit". In fact, the money saved by leaving the system STILL does not benefit  
27       those who do so personally, because MOST of the money saved must be diverted to family and church charity as required  
28       by God's law. There would furthermore be strong motivation for people to contribute to private charity, because all such  
29       charities would be likely to scrutinize all those who come to them for help, and require that they must demonstrate a history  
30       of donation before they can receive the "benefits" of the donations as a needy person.

31       Lastly, we tell all those who have quit the system and then later decide to go back INTO it the following message, which is  
32       a compilation of what God says on this subject from the Bible:

*Policy Document: Members Who Reenter the Franchise System, Form #08.017*

FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/08-PolicyDocs/MbrsWhoReenterSyst.pdf>

### **THEIR RESPONSE:**

Below the following line is their response to our ANSWER to their question.

I think this is an issue that eludes a great many people and it has eluded me for a long time. I also think that people need to  
do what Moses, Abraham, and the early Church did. People will need to return to the "old paths wherein is the good way".

I see the people will need to have an alternative when the "ship sinks" and it will sink. So what did Moses and Abraham do  
and know? They had set up an alternative social welfare system based on sacrifice and "burnt offerings" (tithes). The  
Levites administered these offerings according to the needs of the people just like the governments of men do except they  
are not forced contributions. Everyone was required to give as he was able (tithe) as it is written;

*"Every man shall give as he is able, according to the blessing of the LORD thy God which he hath given thee. "*



In socialist systems men elect benefactors to exercise authority over their neighbor, benefactors like Caesar's, Nimrod's and Obama's. These benefactors take and take and take to give to those that covet what belongs to their neighbor just like we are told in 1 Samuel.

One key element that I think is being overlooked is that there is no daily ministration to which there needs to be. There has to be people willing to serve to administer the tithes. We see this taking place with Moses and this same Spirit doing likewise in Acts:

*"And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the **daily ministration**. Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables."*  
[Acts 6:1-2, Bible]

We see here that there was an issue with the daily ministration (welfare) in caring for the "widows". We also see that the Apostles could not leave the Word of God, they had to continue setting up the network of charity. It goes on to say:

*Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.*

*And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.*  
[Acts 6:3-6, Bible, NKJV]

We also see here that the people chose those they thought who would serve best or "full of the Holy Ghost". Men of Honest report. So how did the ones they chose handle the daily ministration or "social security" funds/items that came through free will offerings to care for those widows who had need? What was this daily ministration?

I'll type boldly here. If we are not coming together to learn to be the welfare for one another, gathering in a network of free assemblies with hearts to serve and GIVE to ministers of God (social security agents in God's government) then we might not be doing what Jesus said to do. People will have to learn how to love and care for one another so that people DO NOT have to go to authoritarian benefactors that exercise authority one over the other. This will require that people GIVE. This will require a network of ministers who come to serve, just like Jesus says.

You see, religion is and always has been how we care for one another;

*Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*  
[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]

There is a system in which to do this and it is called the Kingdom of God. This social welfare system of **charity** works as shown by God through Moses. It is when people began to care more about their own security as opposed to their neighbors liberty did they begin to ask for a king in 1 Samuel. It was up and running. It required a diligent minority of un-slothful people. People who were willing to sacrifice for one another. "Lay down their lives" for one another. It is a workable doable thing and we see it through the scriptures.

By the way, Tally of brings and the gleaning of straw are metaphors for taxes and benefits.

*The "golden statute" they made....they deposited all their wealth into it. Kingdoms use to do this. It bound people not by faith, hope, charity, and love. It bound them by force...if they ever fell under attack and a family sought to flee, they had to flee their wealth also...and I quote:*

*"It was not mere superstition that motivated them, but a practicality stimulated by fear and a lack of faith. The people literally deposited their gold, as well as other goods, sacrificed the right to it, and took, in turn, some sort of exchangeable token. The gold was poured into a large statue for all to see. The wealth of the community was melted together. No one person could leave in the face of an enemy or trouble without leaving behind the golden idol (THEIR WEALTH). His scarabs or tokens were worthless except at his community. The priests of*

1 the temple kept track of all the complexities of this monetary system and, of course, the profits from interest and  
2 usury.

3 This was a common plan found in many governments of that day and this (FEDERAL RESERVE modern day  
4 calf). They deposited their family wealth in a central vault controlled by trusted men of government, in this case  
5 the golden calf was their "reserve fund".<sup>80</sup> Moses understood how it was a wicked thing to bind the people by  
6 anything more than love for one another, a passion for mercy and justice and the way of God the Father.

7 Greek geographer Strabo wrote of a 40-foot-high, gold-and-ivory, statue of the ruler of the gods seated on a  
8 throne.

9 "It seems that if Zeus were to stand up, he would unroof the temple."



10  
11 [Money v. Mammon; His Holy Church;  
12 SOURCE: <http://www.hisholychurch.org/study/gods/cog11movma.php>]

13 Here is a footnote from the same writing;

14 <sup>80</sup> Athens, under the leadership of Pericles, was driven to her **golden goddess, their reserve fund**, and  
15 compelled to melt it down and coin it into money Peloponnesian Wars. They eventually minted a plated bronze  
16 tetradrachms in Athens during the hard times which followed the Athenian collapse, viz. from B.C. 406-393. "In  
17 393 the wretched bronze money of necessity was cried down, the Town Crier being sent round to proclaim that  
18 silver was once more to be the only legal tender : " ARIST. Eccl. 8:19.

19 "'Aerarium '" (from Lat. aes, in its derived sense of "money") the name (in full, aerarium stabulum, treasure-  
20 house) given in ancient [[Rome]] to the public treasury, and in a secondary sense to the public finances. The  
21 treasury contained the moneys and accounts of the state, and also the standards of the legions; the public laws  
22 engraved on brass, the decrees of the senate and other papers and registers of importance. These public  
23 treasures were deposited in the temple of Saturn, on the eastern slope of the Capitoline hill... In addition to the  
24 common treasury, supported by the general taxes and charged with the ordinary expenditure, there was a  
25 special reserve fund, also in the temple of [[Saturn]], the aerarium sanctum (or sanctius), probably originally  
26 consisting of the spoils of war, afterwards maintained chiefly by a 5% tax... The later emperors had a separate  
27 aerarium privatum, containing the moneys allotted for their own use, distinct from the fiscus, which they  
28 administered in the interests of the empire. " From a 1911 Encyclopedia

29 [Money v. Mammon; His Holy Church;  
30 SOURCE: <http://www.hisholychurch.org/study/gods/cog11movma.php#sdfootnote80sym>]

31 Here is the link which has some amazing history in it.

32 They would actually, in times of war, cut and melt off pieces of the statue as said in the above reference to fund the war and  
33 purchase weapons and such. They returned to the ways of Egypt with the "molten image".

34 "It is historical naivety to imagine that this calf of gold was anything more than a depository of wealth,  
35 designed to bind the people together into a loyal community of contributors and investors. By depositing all  
36 their wealth in the Golden Calf, they were assured that no one would desert without departing destitute. Gates  
37 were set up and men and wealth were kept in as well as out.

This practice was used in city-states in order to protect them against trade deficits and to guarantee loyalty. It also secured the power of the ruling elite. The walls served the purpose of keeping the people in as well as intruders out. The king of Sodom had put more value on the human resources than the treasure of his city. They had a system of accounting for the contributions and deposits of the enfranchised citizenry, and some form of exchange amongst the persons of the city was provided, but regulated in value. “  
[The Kingdom Comes, Chapter 9: Temples and Churches; His Holy Church  
SOURCE: <http://www.hisholychurch.org/media/books/TKC/TKCi9-4TempleArts.php#sdfootnote4anc>]

I figured everyone could benefit from the last part.

Lastly, God prescribed what the remedy for the corruption and socialism is, which is to restore HONEST judges and lawyers to the legal profession:

Alas, sinful nation,  
A people laden with iniquity  
A brood of evildoers  
Children who are corrupters!  
**They have forsaken the Lord**  
They have provoked to anger  
The Holy One of Israel,  
They have turned away backward.  
Why should you be stricken again?  
You will revolt more and more.  
The whole head is sick [they are out of their minds!: insane or STUPID or both].  
And the whole heart faints....

Wash yourselves, make yourselves clean;  
Put away the evil of your doings from before My eyes.  
Cease to do evil,  
Learn to do good;  
Seek justice.  
Rebuke the oppressor [the IRS and the Federal Reserve and a corrupted judicial system];  
Defend the fatherless,  
Plead for the widow [and the "nontaxpayer"]....

How the faithful city has become a harlot!  
It [the Constitutional Republic] was full of justice;  
Righteousness lodged in it,  
But now murderers [and abortionists, and socialists, and democrats, and liars and corrupted judges].  
Your silver has become dross,  
Your wine mixed with water.  
Your princes [President, Congressmen, Judges] are rebellious,  
Everyone loves bribes,  
And follows after rewards.  
They do not defend the fatherless,  
nor does the cause of the widow [or the "nontaxpayer"] come before them.

Therefore the Lord says,  
The Lord of hosts, the Mighty One of Israel,  
"Ah, I will rid Myself of My adversaries,  
And take vengeance on My enemies.  
I will turn My hand against you,  
And thoroughly purge away your dross,  
And take away your alloy.  
I will restore your judges [eliminate the BAD judges] as at the first,  
And your counselors [eliminate the BAD lawyers] as at the beginning.  
Afterward you shall be called the city of righteousness, the faithful city."  
[Isaiah 1:1-26, Bible, NKJV]

By “honest lawyers and judges” above, we mean those who DO NOT do any of the following, derived from our About Us Page, Section 1 (<http://sedm.org/Ministry/AboutUs.htm>) and SEDM Articles of Mission, Form #01.004, Section 1.12 (<http://sedm.org/Ministry/SEDMArticlesPublic.pdf>):

1. Legal ignorance on the part of Americans that allows public servants to abuse their authority and violate the law.

1 "One who turns his ear from hearing the law [God's law or man's law], even his prayer is an abomination."  
2 [[Prov. 28:9](#), Bible, NKJV]

3 "But this crowd that does not know [and quote and follow and use] the law is accursed."  
4 [[John 7:49](#), Bible, NKJV]

5 "Salvation is far from the wicked, For they do not seek Your statutes."  
6 [[Psalm 119:155](#), Bible, NKJV]

7 "Every man is supposed to know the law. A party who makes a contract [or enters into a [franchise](#), which is  
8 also a contract] with an officer [of the government] without having it reduced to writing is knowingly accessory  
9 to a violation of duty on his part. Such a party aids in the violation of the law."  
10 [[Clark v. United States](#), 95 U.S. 539 (1877)]

- 11 2. The abuse of [presumption](#) to injure the rights of sovereign Americans, in violation of due process of law and God's law  
12 found in [Numbers 15:30](#). Much of this presumption is compelled by the government by willfully dumbing-down the  
13 average Americans about legal subjects in the public (government) schools. This makes the legal profession into  
14 essentially a "priesthood" and a pagan "religion" that the average American blindly worships and obeys, without ever  
15 questioning authority. It is a supreme injustice to proceed against a person without every conclusion being based  
16 ONLY on fact and not presumption, opinion, or belief. See [Presumption: Chief Weapon for Unlawfully Enlarging](#)  
17 [Federal Jurisdiction](#), Form #05.017 for a detailed article on this scam and sin.


18 "But the person who does anything presumptuously, whether he is native-born or a stranger, that one brings  
19 reproach on the LORD, and he shall be cut off from among his people."  
20 [[Numbers 15:30](#), Bible, NKJV]

22 "Due Process: [. . .] If any question of fact or liability be conclusively be presumed [rather than proven with  
23 evidence] against him, **this is not due process of law [in fact, it is the OPPOSITE of due process].**"  
24 [[Black's Law Dictionary](#), Sixth Edition, p. 500]

26 (1) [8:4993] **Conclusive presumptions affecting protected interests:**

27 A conclusive presumption may be defeated where its application would impair a party's constitutionally-  
28 protected liberty or property interests. In such cases, conclusive presumptions have been held to violate a  
29 party's due process and equal protection rights. [[Vlandis v. Kline](#) (1973) [412 U.S. 441](#), 449, 93 S.Ct. 2230,  
30 2235; [Cleveland Bd. of Ed. v. LaFleur](#) (1974) [414 U.S. 632](#), 639-640, 94 S.Ct. 1208, 1215-presumption under  
31 Illinois law that unmarried fathers are unfit violates process]  
32 [[Rutter Group Practice Guide-Federal Civil Trials and Evidence](#), paragraph 8:4993, page 8K-34]

- 33 3. Public servants deceiving the public by portraying "Private Law" as "Public Law". See [Requirement for Consent](#),  
34 Form #05.003 for an article on this subject.
- 35 4. Public servants refusing to acknowledge the requirement for consent in all human interactions. See [Requirement for](#)  
36 [Consent](#), Form #05.003 for an article on this subject.
- 37 5. Willful omissions from government websites and publications that keep the public from hearing the whole truth. The  
38 problem is not what these sources say, but what they DON'T say. The [Great IRS Hoax, Form #11.302](#) (OFFSITE  
39 LINK) contains over 2,000 pages of facts that neither the IRS nor any one in government is willing to reveal to you  
40 because it would destroy the gravy train of plunder that pays their bloated salaries and fat retirement in violation of [18](#)  
41 [U.S.C. §208](#).
- 42 6. The abuse of "words of art" to deceive the people in both government publications and the law itself. [Click here](#)  
43 (<http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/FormsInstr-Cites.htm>, OFFSITE LINK) for examples.
- 44 6.1. [Sovereignty Forms and Instructions Online](#), Form #10.004, Cites by Topic (OFFSITE LINK) for examples.  
45 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 46 6.2. [Legal Deception, Propaganda, and Fraud](#), Form #05.014-explains games to unlawfully expand legal definitions  
47 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 48 6.3. [Citizenship Status v. Tax Status](#), Form #10.011 -shows how STATUTORY v. CONSTITUTIONAL contexts and  
49 GEOGRAPHICAL v. LEGAL contexts are confused to usurp jurisdiction.  
50 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 51 6.4. [Rules of Presumption and Statutory Interpretation](#), Litigation Tool #01.006 -prevents abuse of words of art  
52 during litigation.  
53 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

7. The lack of "equal protection of the law" in courts of justice relating to the statements and actions of public servants, whereby the IRS doesn't have to assume responsibility for its statements and actions, and yet persons who fill out tax forms can be thrown in jail and prosecuted for fraud if they emulate the IRS by being just as careless. This also includes "selective enforcement", where the DOJ positively refuses to prosecute submitters of [false information returns](#) but spends a disproportionate share of its resources prosecuting false income tax returns. They do this because they are more interested in STEALING your money than in justice. See:
- 7.1. *Federal Courts and IRS' Own IRM Say NOT RESPONSIBLE for its actions or its words or following its own internal procedures*, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Articles/IRSNotResponsible.htm>
- 7.2. *Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment*, Form #05.033  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 7.3. *Government Establishment of Religion*, Form #05.038 -how government establishes itself as a pagan deity and a religion by using franchises to systematically destroy the separation of powers and the requirement for equal protection  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
8. Abuses of franchises that undermine the protection of private rights by the government and the courts:
- 8.1. Offering or enforcing NATIONAL franchises within states of the Union or outside of the federal territory and federal domiciliaries that they are limited to. This results in a destruction of the [separation of powers](#).
- 8.2. Enforcing franchises, such as a " [trade or business](#)" without requiring explicit written consent in some form, such as the issuance and voluntary signing of an application for a license. See *Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030 for details.
- 8.3. [Forcing non-franchisees into franchise courts against their consent](#). This is a violation of the Fifth Amendment takings clause and the prohibition against eminent domain.
- 8.4. Refusing to satisfy the burden of proof upon government opponents in a franchise court that the owner of the property subject to the dispute VOLUNTARILY donated it to a public use, public purpose, and public office. In other words, that all property is PRIVATE until it is **proven on the record with evidence** that the owner EXPRESSLY AND VOLUNTARILY DONATED it to PUBLIC use and thereby made it subject to government jurisdiction.
- 8.5. Abusing sovereign immunity to protect franchise administrators such as the IRS from [illegal enforcement of the franchise against non-franchisees](#). All franchises are PRIVATE rather than GOVERNMENTAL in nature and governments who offer them drop down to the level of ordinary persons when they offer them.
- 8.6. Refusing to provide a way to quit franchises or hiding forms for doing so.
- 8.7. PRESUMING or pretending like there is no such thing as a non-franchisee or non-taxpayer or that EVERYONE is a statutory "taxpayer". This compels people to contract with the government and interferes with their First Amendment right to legally and politically associate. See:
- Your Exclusive Right to Declare or Establish Your Civil Status*, Form #13.008.  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/13-SelfFamilyChurchGovnce/RightToDeclStatus.pdf>
- 8.8. Attorney licensing, which destroys the integrity of the legal profession in its role as a check and balance when the government or especially the judiciary becomes corrupt as it is now.
- 8.9. Abuse of the federal income tax system, which is a franchise and an excise, to bribe states of the Union to give up their sovereignty, act like federal "States" and territories, and accept what amounts to federal bribes to disrespect the rights or those under their care and protection.  See *State Income Taxes*, Form #05.031 for details.
- See the following for details on the above abuses:
- Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
9. Efforts to destroy the separation of powers that is the main protection for our liberties. This results in abuses of the Court system for political, rather than legal, purposes (politicization of the courts). All of the federal courts we have now are Article IV, territorial courts that are part of the Executive, rather than Judicial Branch of the de facto government. As such, there is no separation of powers and nothing but tyranny can result. See the following for proof of this destruction:
- 9.1. *Government Conspiracy to Destroy the Separation of Powers*, Form #05.023- shows how lying, thieving public servants have systematically destroyed the separation of powers since the founding of this country  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>
- 9.2. *What Happened to Justice?*, Form #06.012-book which proves that we have no Judicial Branch within the federal government, and that all the existing federal courts are acting in an Article IV territorial capacity as part of the Executive, rather than Judicial, branch of the government.  
<http://sedm.org/ItemInfo/Ebooks/WhatHappJustice/WhatHappJustice.htm>



9.3. *How Scoundrels Corrupted Our Republican Form of Government, Family Guardian Fellowship* (OFFSITE LINK)-brief overview of how the separation of powers has been systematically destroyed  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>

10. The abuse of the government's power to tax in order to transfer wealth between private individuals, which makes the government into a thief and a Robinhood. This includes:

10.1. Enforcing the tax laws against other than "public officers" of the government. See *Why Your Government is Either a Thief or You are a "Public Officer" for Income Tax Purposes*, Form #05.008 for details.

10.2. Offering government "benefits" of any kind to anyone who does not ALREADY work for the government. See *The Government "Benefits" Scam*, Form #05.040 for details.

11. Corruption of our monetary system that allows the government to:

11.1. Counterfeit while denying to all others the right, thus creating an unconstitutional "Title of Nobility" for itself and making itself into a pagan deity, and denying the equal protection to all that is the foundation of the Constitution.

11.2. STEAL from the American people by diluting the value of money already into circulation.

11.3. Exercise undue control banks and financial institutions that causes them to effectively become federal employment recruiters for the federal government by compelling use of government identifying numbers for those pursuing accounts or loans.

See the following for details on this scam:

*The Money Scam*, Form #05.041

<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

12. Creating, perpetuating, condoning, or in any way protecting conflicts of financial interest within the government that cause the self-interest to undermine the requirements of the law, EQUALITY, or the protection of exclusively PRIVATE rights by:

12.1. Making judges "taxpayers".

12.2. Making jurists or voters into "benefit" recipients, franchisees, and/or public officers.

12.3. Allowing judges to act in a POLITICAL mode within any franchise court in the Executive rather than Judicial Branch. This also violates the separation of powers.

12.4. Turning police officers into revenue collectors who enforce malum-prohibitum offenses that result in revenue to the state.

12.5. Allowing any judicial officer or witness to receive any kind of financial reward for essentially compelling someone to assume any civil status under any civil franchise, including the income tax.

12.6. Allowing judges to act BOTH as an Article III judge AND an Article IV judge at the same time.

12.7. Allowing PRIVATE citizens to appear before a franchise judge with a financial conflict of interest.

12.8. Making ordinary citizens ALSO into public officers in any context OTHER than as a jurist or voter. This causes income taxes to become poll taxes and disenfranchises all those who insist on remaining private.

12.9. Constitutional states surrendering their sovereignty and agreeing to act essentially as federal territories or federal corporations in exchange for participation in national franchises such as Social Security, Medicare, etc.

12.10. Governments going into debt and thereby becoming financial slaves to banks or bank cartels. This includes a debt based fiat currency system such as the federal reserve.

13. Active interference with common law remedies for the protection of PRIVATE rights from abuse by government actors. Governments are established exclusively to protect PRIVATE rights and PRIVATE property. Any attempt to undermine such rights without the express written consent of the owner in each case is not only NOT a classical "government" function, but is an ANTI-government function that amounts to a MAFIA "protection racket". This includes but is not limited to:

13.1. Refusing to recognize or protect PRIVATE property or PRIVATE rights, the essence of which is the RIGHT TO EXCLUDE anyone and everyone from using or benefitting from the use of the property.

13.2. PRESUMING that "a government OF THE PEOPLE, BY THE PEOPLE, and FOR THE PEOPLE" is a government in which everyone is a public officer.

13.3. Refusing to recognize or allow constitutional remedies and instead substituting STATUTORY remedies available only to public officers.

13.4. Interfering with introduction of evidence that the court or forum is ONLY allowed to hear disputes involving public officers in the government.

13.5. PRESUMING or ASSUMING that the ownership of the property subject to dispute is QUALIFIED rather than ABSOLUTE and that the party the ownership is shared with is the government.

13.6. Allowing government "benefit" recipients to be decision makers in cases involving PRIVATE rights. This is a denial of a republican form of government, which is founded on impartial decision makers. See *Sinking Fund Cases*, 99 U.S. 700 (1878).

- 13.7. Interfering with or sanctioning litigants who insist on discussing the laws that have been violated in the courtroom or prohibiting jurists from reading the laws in question or accessing the law library in the courthouse while serving as jurists. This transforms a society of law into a society of men and allows the judge to substitute HIS will in place of what the law expressly requires.
- 13.8. Illegally and unconstitutionally invoking the Declaratory Judgments Act or the Anti-Injunction Act as an excuse to NOT protect PRIVATE rights from government interference in the case of EXCLUSIVELY PRIVATE people who are NOT statutory "taxpayers". See Flawed Tax Arguments to Avoid, Form #08.004, Sections 6.10 and 6.11.
- 13.9. Interfering with ways to change or correct your citizenship or statutory status in government records. That "status" is the "res" to which all franchise rights attach, usually ILLEGALLY.

## **11 Why God COMMANDS believers who are victimized by socialist wealth redistribution to confront the benefit recipients and also not associate with them**

When socialism takes hold of the tax and legal system of a country, the tax system is abused for wealth transfer. In effect, the have-nots vote to receive government checks and the haves are punished by being stolen from to pay the have nots. Here is the way one of our members describes it:

*Obama or Romney for President?*

*One should always be prepared:*

*So, if someone asks you what the main difference is between most of the Obama supporters and Romney supporters, instead of stammering, and stuttering, and looking for an answer, just tell them that the Romney supporters sign their checks on the front, and the Obama supporters sign their checks on the back.*

The supreme court rejected such abuse of the tax system by saying the following:

*"The power to tax is, therefore, the strongest, the most pervading of all powers of government, reaching directly or indirectly to all classes of the people. It was said by Chief Justice Marshall, in the case of McCulloch v. Md., 4 Wheat. 431, that the power to tax is the power to destroy. A striking instance of the truth of the proposition is seen in the fact that the existing tax of ten per cent, imposed by the United States on the circulation of all other banks than the National Banks, drove out of existence every \*state bank of circulation within a year or two after its passage. This power can be readily employed against one class of individuals and in favor of another, so as to ruin the one class and give unlimited wealth and prosperity to the other, if there is no implied limitation of the uses for which the power may be exercised.*

*To lay, with one hand, the power of the government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it upon favored individuals to aid private enterprises and build up private fortunes, is none the less a robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.*

*Nor is it taxation. 'A tax,' says Webster's Dictionary, 'is a rate or sum of money assessed on the person or property of a citizen by government for the use of the nation or State.' 'Taxes are burdens or charges imposed by the Legislature upon persons or property to raise money for public purposes.' Cooley, Const. Lim., 479.*

*Coulter, J., in Northern Liberties v. St. John's Church, 13 Pa. St., 104 says, very forcibly, 'I think the common mind has everywhere taken in the understanding that taxes are a public imposition, levied by authority of the government for the purposes of carrying on the government in all its machinery and operations—that they are imposed for a public purpose.' See, also Pray v. Northern Liberties, 31 Pa.St., 69; Matter of Mayor of N.Y., 11 Johns., 77; Camden v. Allen, 2 Dutch., 398; Sharpless v. Mayor, supra; Hanson v. Vernon, 27 Ia., 47; Whiting v. Fond du Lac, supra."*  
*[Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 (1874)]*

In effect, the producers become surety to pay for the "benefits" of the idle have nots, and thus failure is rewarded, and success is punished. This turns morality and virtue on its head.

Below is how we describe the abuse of the political process by the have-nots to steal from the haves.

*"Ineptocracy (in-ep-toc'-ra-cy) - a system of government where the least capable to lead are elected by the least capable of producing, and where the members of society least likely to sustain themselves or succeed, are rewarded with goods and services paid for by the confiscated wealth of a diminishing number of producers.*

*Synonyms: Electile dysfunction. "*

*[SEDM Political Dictionary]*

Below is what God says about those who have become surety for someone else, including those "haves" or "producers" who have become INVOLUNTARY surety for the theft of others, mainly through the above abuse of the electoral process:

*"A man devoid of understanding shakes hands in a pledge, and becomes surety for his friend."  
[Proverbs 17:18, Bible, NKJV]*

*"He who is surety for a stranger will suffer, but one who hates being surety is secure."  
[Prov. 11:15, NKJV]*

*"My son, if you become surety for your friend, if you have shaken hands in pledge for a stranger, you are snared by the words of your mouth; you are taken by the words of your mouth. So do this, my son, and deliver yourself; for you have come into the hand of your friend [slavery!]: Go and humble yourself; plead with your friend. Give no sleep to your eyes, nor slumber to your eyelids. Deliver yourself like a gazelle from the hand of the hunter; and like a bird from the hand of the fowler."  
[Prov. 6:1-5, Bible, NKJV]*

So, God calls believers who want to be obedient to His law to confront the have-nots and STOP the theft. It also says that we should NOT associate with the thieves, even if they accomplish their thievery through the electoral process:

*Avoid Bad Company*

**"My son, if sinners [socialists, in this case] entice you,  
Do not consent  
If they say, "Come with us,  
Let us lie in wait to shed blood;  
Let us lurk secretly for the innocent [nontaxpayers, the newborn, and the producers] without cause;  
Let us swallow them alive like Sheol,  
And whole, like those who go down to the Pit:  
We shall fill our houses with spoil [plunder];  
Cast in your lot among us,  
Let us all have one purse [the GOVERNMENT purse]"--  
My son, do not walk in the way with them,  
Keep your foot from their path;  
For their feet run to evil,  
And they make haste to shed blood.  
Surely, in vain the net is spread  
In the sight of any bird;  
But they lie in wait for their own blood.  
They lurk secretly for their own lives.  
So are the ways of everyone who is greedy for gain;  
It takes away the life of its owners."  
[Proverbs 1:10-19, Bible, NKJV]**

## **12 Dialog with someone who said they wanted to reenter or had reentered the system<sup>15</sup>**

The following interchange occurred on our website forums between us and a former member who abandoned the freedom community and went back into the system. He pursued a job with the federal government, married and got a marriage license, and filed IRS Form 1040's.

### **12.1 Question**

1. What do you tell people who go back into the system after learning the truths on this website?

<sup>15</sup> Based upon: <http://sedm.org/forums/topic/what-do-you-tell-people-who-go-back-into-the-system-after-learning-the-truths-on-this-website/>

1 2. If they were friends BEFORE do you change your attitude towards them AFTER?

## 2 12.2 Answer

- 3 1. Those who have taken the time to learn the truths on this site and who make what we call "a fully informed choice" to  
4 enter back into government slavery are told:  
5 1.1. That they are hypocrites.  
6 1.2. That they should not use our tax materials to interact with anyone in the legal profession.  
7 1.3. That they are Members in Bad Standing.  
8 2. If they were friends before they made the decision, then they cease to be friends.

9 We believe what defines a man is not what he SAYS or THINKS, but what he DOES. Even those who TALK like freedom  
10 lovers but ACT like government whores and slaves are still government whores. By their fruits ye shall know them (Matt.  
11 7:15-20). God tells us how to deal with government whores:

12 *"Turn at my [God's] rebuke;*  
13 *Surely I will pour out my spirit on you;*  
14 *I will make my words known to you.*  
15 *Because I have called and you refused,*  
16 *I have stretched out my hand and no one regarded,*  
17 *Because you disdained all my counsel,*  
18 *And would have none of my rebuke,*  
19 *I [God] also will laugh at your calamity;*  
20 *I [God] will mock when your terror comes,*  
21 *When your terror comes like a storm,*  
22 *And your destruction comes like a whirlwind,*  
23 *When distress and anguish come upon you.*  
24 *Then they will call on me [God, or even God's servants such as us], but I will not answer;*  
25 *They will seek me diligently [going to SEDM], but they will not find me.*  
26 *Because they hated knowledge*  
27 *And did not choose the fear of the LORD,*  
28 *They would have none of my counsel*  
29 *And despised my every rebuke.*  
30 *Therefore they shall eat the fruit of their own way,*  
31 *And be filled to the full with their own fancies.*  
32 *For the turning away of the simple will slay them,*  
33 *And the complacency of fools will destroy them;*  
34 *But whoever listens to me [and KEEPS my commandments per John 14] will dwell safely,*  
35 *And will be secure [protected], without fear of evil."*  
36 *[Prov. 1:23-33, Bible, NKJV]*

37 *"Come out from among them [the unbelievers and government idolaters]*  
38 *And be separate, says the Lord.*  
39 *Do not touch what is unclean,*  
40 *And I will receive you.*  
41 *I will be a Father to you,*  
42 *And you shall be my sons and daughters,*  
43 *Says the Lord Almighty."*  
44 *[2 Corinthians 6:17-18, Bible, NKJV]*

45 *"And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose them."*  
46 *[Eph. 5:11, Bible, NKJV]*

## 47 12.3 Response to person who reentered the system

48 Here is one response that was sent to a member by another member (not us) who went to work for the government and  
49 reentered the taxpayer roles as a FRAUDULENT "resident alien" filing IRS Form 1040 tax returns after learning our  
50 materials:

51 *Friendship has to be based on common values that are ACTED on. Those who believe one thing and do another*  
52 *contradict themselves and live a lie. We can't associate with people who want to knowingly and willingly live a*  
53 *lie and a deception.*

54 *As far as we are aware, and please correct us if we are wrong:*

1. You are now a statutory "taxpayer" even though you know that you don't satisfy all the prerequisites to be one.
2. You went to work for the Beast doing the dirty work of the Beast.
3. You are using law on behalf of the government to further government, rather than private ends. This only adds to the already unbearable oppression of millions of people.
4. You just got married with a marriage license.
5. The money you are earning is stolen from people who don't want to pay, and therefore you are laundering **STOLEN** money for the government. I hope you aren't contributing any of that money to your church, because the Bible says that the wages of a government harlot cannot enter the treasury of the church. Deut. 23:18.
6. You are committing perjury on tax forms by filing a resident 1040 tax form and:
  - 6.1. Falsely declaring yourself a public officer and therefore "taxpayer" even though you don't lawfully occupy a public office. That's a crime. 18 U.S.C. §912.
  - 6.2. Falsely declaring yourself a "resident" of a place you don't physically live when you know you are **NOT** an "alien" and all "residents" in the tax code are aliens.
  - 6.3. Falsely declaring the content of a form to be true that no one in the government is willing to take responsibility for and which is a **LIE** if interpreted according to the internal revenue code.
7. You did all the above **AFTER** you learned our materials and knew exactly what you were doing. In that sense, your choice was "willful", informed, and deliberate from a legal perspective.

If everything we just said is true, then yes, we want to permanently end our friendship. And please don't mention our name, honorable or not, to anyone.

## **12.4 Response to the previous section by person who switched sides**

Ron Paul files his tax returns. Does it make him a bad individual? He wants to get rid of a lot of things. Joe Bannister, Former IRS Agent files his returns. Look at his achievements. Attorney Larry Becraft files his returns and look at what he has achieved with his wins.

The above people can share their stories with the rest of the world.

A lot of freedom fighters file tax returns. They want to change the way things are run. Are they bad persons too? They must be bad because you say they are. You saying what you say does not make it true. Nor has God told you as a prophet, to tell us how we run our lives.

Change can be made within government, much like a virus within a computer program.

Clearly, you are not as well versed in Sun Tzu teachings.

Your hatred will get you nowhere.

## **12.5 Response to the response**

The problem is not filing tax returns. The problem is filing **KNOWINGLY FALSE** tax returns or tax returns at all as a nontaxpayer or **OTHER** than a public officer. If they believe that what is on the tax return is true based on their own reading of the law, then there is nothing wrong with what they do. They probably **SUSPECT** that the forms they are filing are false but can't prove it. But to you? You know better and have demonstrated so in in the member forums.

I submit tax returns, but they are:

1. **NONSTATUTORY** returns
2. On **CUSTOM** non-IRS forms
3. Filed by a **NONTAXPAYER**
4. With **NO NUMBER** or liability on them.
5. Which contain a criminal complaint against the filer of the false information return that gave rise to the need to file.
6. Which correct the **FALSE** information returns.

If you can't do the above or wouldn't do the above, knowing full well that it is the **ONLY** way to avoid a crime, then Satan and not God owns you. Anything else is a crime that justifies removing you from government employment. The crimes you are now willfully and knowingly and regularly committing as a government employee include the following:

1. Perjury, 18 U.S.C. §1001.



- 1 2. Impersonating a public officer. 18 U.S.C. §912.
- 2 3. Aiding the filing of knowingly false information returns and returns. 26 U.S.C. §7206 and 7207.
- 3 4. Acceptance or solicitation of public office. 18 U.S.C. §211.
- 4 5. Bribery of public officer. 18 U.S.C. §201.

5 We hate the crime, not the criminal. God does the same thing and so do the police. If that kind of hatred will not get  
6 anywhere, then it will get the police and the current government and God as we know Him nowhere as well. The Bible  
7 calls Christians to "fear the Lord" (Deut. 6:13, 24; Deut. 10:20). The phrase "fearing the Lord" is then defined as "hating  
8 evil" (Prov. 8:13).

9 You know better, and therefore, for you filing a resident (alien) tax form or any "taxpayer" form without clarification  
10 constitutes all the crimes indicated above. These crimes are what we hate, not you. Since God commands us to love our  
11 neighbor, then we are supposed to dislike anything that hurts him/her, which includes crime. Ignorance is an excuse in tax  
12 crimes. However, you don't have that defense anymore and you'd be a LIAR to invoke it. Lawyers call this "mens rea" and  
13 you definitely satisfy the legal criteria to be a criminal based on what you are admittedly doing. You ate the fruit off the  
14 tree of knowledge, like Eve. You can't go back into the Garden of friendship or fellowship with us anymore after you act in  
15 contradiction to what you KNOW and have expressed personally is truth. Now that you know the truth, you're a criminal  
16 every time you file a RESIDENT (alien) tax return, which has "trade or business" earnings, or which has "trade or business"  
17 deductions. Maybe that's why some people say "ignorance is bliss". We're not playing God, but imitating God's approach to  
18 sinners.

19 It is a fact that one can HATE without even knowing it. You are hating all those who are oppressed by the evil which you  
20 subsidize with your tax dollars. Your hatred will get you nowhere. And it is hatred if you subsidize terrorism and socialism  
21 and idolatry with kickbacks and bribes from your pay that are criminal in nature. It is hatred to steal from the innocent and  
22 ignorant to subsidize you and your family, and all of your pay is stolen money.

23 God calls us to love our neighbor. You don't directly or indirectly hurt people you are supposed to love. When King David  
24 (in the Bible) had someone else kill the husband of someone he committed adultery with, he was held accountable to the  
25 murder. Directly or indirectly, blood is on the hands of all those who subsidize international terrorists, and the states are  
26 legislatively foreign nations under the Constitution. It is a crime to protect the activities of these terrorists as a jurist or a  
27 voter. See 18 U.S.C. §208. No amount of word-smithing or justification or illegal enforcement of franchises within the  
28 states can change that.

29 God may call us to forgive, but to do so mainly against those who repent. You aren't repenting and you refuse to progress.  
30 There is ONE unpardonable sin named in the Bible, which is:

31 **The Peril of Not Progressing**

32 *1 Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary principles of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying*  
33 *again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, 2 of the doctrine of baptisms, of*  
34 *laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. 3 And this we will[a] do if God*  
35 *permits.*

36 *4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become*  
37 *partakers of the Holy Spirit, 5 and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, 6 if*  
38 *they fall away,[b] to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God,*  
39 *and put Him to an open shame.*

40 *7 For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is*  
41 *cultivated, receives blessing from God; 8 but if it bears thorns and briers, it is rejected and near to being*  
42 *cursed, whose end is to be burned.*  
43 *[Hebrews 6:1-7, Bible, NKJV]*

44 Granted, you are not a Christian but a Muslim. Nevertheless, we must apply the same LEGAL criteria to you as we do  
45 equally to all, in terms of God's definition of salvation. We do this because the Bible is "natural law".

46 The ONLY mandate in the Constitution (Art. 4, Section 4) is that the national government shall protect EACH state from  
47 invasion, and it is the biggest invader and warmonger against the rights of the states, as Thomas Jefferson predicted.

The problem is that you want to act like an animal but be treated like a civilized man. The only thing animals do is minimize pain and maximize pleasure. Taking the easy way out or the path of least resistance, if that path causes a crime or immorality, is the animal way of REACTING to a situation. Men with morals and principles do MUCH more than simply REACT to the world around them or act like animals. But animal is the level you are operating at now and to hell with what God or His holy law requires is your approach. We don't associate with animals, but men with principles and morals that they ACT upon. Animals operate upon fear, and we know that all fear is of the devil.

God can't use people who are "comfortable" or complacent. That may be why He said that it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into heaven. Mark 10:25. You did what you did because you wanted to be comfortable and complacent. Morality had nothing to do with it, obviously. You wanted to be a "friend of the world", which God says makes you His enemy. That's the only way to be "comfortable", is to divorce God and be friends with the world.

*"Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure [unearned money from the government] that war in your members [and your democratic governments]? You lust [after other people's money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to increase your standard of living] and covet [the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your government to STEAL for you!]. You fight and war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your idleness]. Yet you do not have because you do not ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship with the world [or the governments of the world] is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world [or the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of God."*  
[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]

Attorney Larry Becraft can't lawfully represent clients as a statutory "taxpayer". He has a criminal conflict of interest in violation of 18 U.S.C. §208 and he is probably also violating his state constitution by simultaneously serving as an officer of the federal government and the state government at the same time called a "taxpayer" and an "attorney". For that, he in all good conscience should be disbarred. No man can serve two masters. See:

Trade or Business Scam, Form #05.001, Sections 9.1-9.2  
DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/TradeOrBusScam.pdf>  
FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

Government whores called taxpayers who commit perjury on tax forms are a dime a dozen. We've got plenty of them here to be "friends" with. No need to look further. Goodbye forever.

On this subject, the founders said:

*"If ye love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or arms. Crouch down and lick the hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget ye were our countrymen."*  
[Samuel Adams]

## **13 Rebutted Frequently Asked Questions (FAQs) and Accusations**

### **13.1 You're being too black and white. Life is grey**

#### **ACCUSATION:**

You say that people who participate in franchises and socialism are "agents of Satan" because they are violating God's commands in the Old Testament as follows:

#### **Curses of Disobedience [to God's Laws]**

**"The alien [Washington, D.C. is legislatively "alien" in relation to states of the Union] who is among you shall rise higher and higher above you, and you shall come down lower and lower [malicious destruction of EQUAL PROTECTION and EQUAL TREATMENT by abusing FRANCHISES]. He shall lend to you [Federal Reserve counterfeiting franchise], but you shall not lend to him; he shall be the head, and you shall be the tail.**

1 "Moreover all these curses shall come upon you and pursue and overtake you, until you are destroyed,  
2 because you did not obey the voice of the Lord your God, to keep His commandments and His  
3 statutes which He commanded you. And they shall be upon you for a sign and a wonder, and on your  
4 descendants forever.

5 "Because you did not serve [ONLY] the Lord your God with joy and gladness of heart, for the abundance of  
6 everything, therefore you shall serve your [covetous thieving lawyer] enemies, whom the Lord will send against  
7 you, in hunger, in thirst, in nakedness, and in need of everything; and He will put a yoke of iron [franchise  
8 codes] on your neck until He has destroyed you. The Lord will bring a nation against you from afar [the  
9 District of CRIMINALS], from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flies [the American Eagle], a  
10 nation whose language [LEGALESE] you will not understand, a nation of fierce [coercive and fascist]  
11 countenance, which does not respect the elderly [assassinates them by denying them healthcare through  
12 bureaucratic delays on an Obamacare waiting list] nor show favor to the young [destroying their ability to  
13 learn in the public FOOL system]. And they shall eat the increase of your livestock and the produce of your  
14 land [with "trade or business" franchise taxes], until you [and all your property] are destroyed [or  
15 STOLEN/CONFISCATED]; they shall not leave you grain or new wine or oil, or the increase of your cattle or  
16 the offspring of your flocks, until they have destroyed you.  
17 [Deut. 28:43-51, Bible, NKJV]

18 You cite the following article to back up your claim, and blame pursuing franchises and government benefits as the behavior  
19 that violates the above:

How Scoundrels Corrupted Our Republican Form of Government, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<https://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Evidence/HowScCorruptOurRepubGovt.htm>

20 You then cite John Macarthur in the following sermon at 10:20, in which he says that there are TWO potential "persons" in  
21 each of us who are "in the Kingdom of Heaven" and "in the Kingdom of Satan"<sup>16</sup>:

Do Not Love the World, Grace to You  
<https://youtu.be/pwv6qot7MZ4>

22 My objection is to your non sequitur "either/or" logic:

23 *"We don't intend to say that people who participate in franchises are going to hell. The only thing we wish to*  
24 *emphasize is that those who participate are agents of Satan"*

25 This is like saying,

26 *"Microsoft builds computers. You build computers, therefore, you are an agent of Microsoft."*

27 Further, you followed with two more either/or logical statements:

28 *"We all sin, and when we do so, we are agents of Satan (a noun),"*

29 And:

30 *"when we do good, we are agents of God (a noun)."*

31 Oh, that it were that simple!

32 *"If you do good, you go to heaven; if you do evil (accept a government franchise), you are an agent of Satan, . .*  
33 *. and you are going to hell."*

34 (Yes, I know you don't believe this, but this is the logic being used.)

35 First, the Holy Scripture says,

36 *"there is none that doeth good, no not one."*

---

<sup>16</sup> You mention the article below in the following article on your blog: *We Must Leave the World to Save the World (Sanctification)*, SEDM Blog;  
<https://sedm.org/we-must-leave-the-world-to-save-the-world-sanctification/>.

1 So, according to your logic everyone on planet Earth is an agent of Satan.

2 A day in the life of an average Christian might look like this: sinned, did good, sinned, did good, did good, did good,  
3 sinned, sinned, did good, sinned, did good, sinned, did good, did good, did good, sinned, sinned, did good. sinned, did  
4 good, sinned, did good, did good, did good, sinned, sinned, did good, sinned, did good, sinned, did good, did good, did  
5 good, sinned, sinned, did good

6 So in your universe of black and white one day in the life of a Christian looks like this: Agent of Satan, Agent of God,  
7 Agent of Satan, Agent of God, Agent of God, Agent of Sin. Agent of Satan, Agent of God, Agent of Satan, Agent of God,  
8 Agent of God, Agent of Sin. Agent of Satan, Agent of God, Agent of Satan, Agent of God, Agent of God, Agent of Sin;

9 So in your world:

10 *"Since we all sin and we all do good, then we serve both God and Satan at different times; when we serve*  
11 *government, we serve other gods."*

12 That is, the average Christian is a spiritual schizoid.

13 But, the scripture is not so compartmentalized. Even the carnal Christians in Corinth were called "saints." Even worldly,  
14 compromised, franchised Lot was called "righteous."

15 In my opinion, your logic is black/white, either/or, creating a state of spiritual schizophrenia in the mind of believers; that  
16 is, in your theology every Christian is a double agent.

17 In Biblical thinking, Paul reasoned:

18 *"How can we who died to sin still live in it?"*  
19 *[Romans 6:2]*

20 . . .that is, all Christians are dead to sin and alive to God. They are not half-dead, half-alive, a servant of Satan, and a  
21 Servant of God.

22 Your theology and Biblical accurateness is hereby challenged . . . and in brotherly love.

23 **RESPONSE:**

24 Thanks for that wonderful and insightful observation and the opportunity to clarify our position:

25 1. We don't say that people are going to hell because of franchises or that they are all good or all bad. It is you who falsely  
26 concludes this and compartmentalizes this subject. Most people divert the discussion of this subject matter as you have  
27 because they in effect are protecting their right to STEAL from their neighbor to pay for their "benefits".

28 2. The more loudly and vociferously people argue to defend their FRANCHISE PRIVILEGE to receive the benefit, the  
29 more desperate they are to receive those benefits and defend their position. But that position is an argument from the flesh  
30 that accomplishes nothing, avoids and hides the truth, and dishonors God and the higher calling He has for us all. In effect,  
31 it is an argument to glorify or protect sin and perpetuate "political correctness".

32 All such arguments do is show the degree of economic pressure and criminal financial conflict of interest that people are  
33 under who receive and need these benefits. It doesn't prove God is wrong on this subject.

34 3. One can be an agent of Satan and sin WITHOUT going to hell is what we DO say. Since all sin and there is not one  
35 good man on the planet, according to Jesus, then to conclude they are all going to Hell would make His visit here absolutely  
36 pointless, now wouldn't it? Why come to call the sinners to repentance and save them if they are all going to Hell anyway?

37 4. When we sin, we limit our "benefit" or reward in Heaven under the Bible franchise, we don't lose our ability to ENTER  
38 Heaven. Christianity is TWO dimensional, not one dimensional as you seem to be advocating.

1 4.1. Salvation and the right to enter Heaven is the first dimension. This is based on faith.

2 4.2. The reward or "benefit" we receive AFTER we enter. This is based on works. Do you really believe that Abraham,  
3 Moses, Jesus, Daniel, and all those famous people will get the same room in the "house of many mansions" as you? If they  
4 do, then God is a socialist and there is no reward for working hard! I don't want to go to a place like that! Would you  
5 want to work for an employer who doesn't pay his BEST employees more?

6 5. We only serve other Gods and commit idolatry when serving government IF:

7 5.1. Government has more power rights and authority than a single man. That means they have "supernatural powers"  
8 above you, who are the natural.. OR

9 5.2. Government FORCES us to disobey God. This happens when they either FORCE us to do things God forbids or  
10 FORCE us to NOT do things he commands.

11 Anything not in the above list is NOT an act of idolatry. Doing the above is, in fact, exactly what the First Amendment  
12 prohibits:

13 *FIRST AMENDMENT*  
14 *RELIGION AND EXPRESSION*

15 ***Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof;***  
16 ***or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to***  
17 ***petition the Government for a redress of grievances.***

18 There are lots of things government does that don't fit in the above list of two things. Therefore NOT every occasion of  
19 interacting with government is an act of idolatry. ONLY those things above are. When we are asked or forced to do the  
20 above acts of idolatry by government, we are called BY GOD to disobey government, legally disassociate, and become  
21 civil nonresidents.

22 *"We ought to obey God rather than men."*  
23 *[Acts 5:29, Bible, NKJV]*

24 It's not black and white, but GREY as you say. But even grey is made up of a combination of individual black and white  
25 pixels.

26 6. It is not schizophrenia to recognize that we all have both GOOD and BAD in us and do GOOD and BAD. Its reality.  
27 We are not all good or all bad or all perfect, even after we become Christians.

28 *"Christians aren't PERFECT, just FORGIVEN for being IMPERFECT."*

29 However, when we do good, we serve God and when we do Bad, we serve Satan. To suggest that so-called "Christians"  
30 NEVER do Bad or that they aren't serving Satan WHEN they do bad is pure hypocrisy and arrogance that alienates those  
31 who are considering joining Christianity. That sort of hypocrisy is why many people, in fact have a low opinion of religion  
32 in general.

33 If Christians DON'T serve Satan WHEN they do bad, then why even HAVE a "Satan" or "Devil" in the scripture to begin  
34 with? Isn't Satan the personification of evil itself? Why have such a fictional or virtual "person" in God's Bible trust  
35 indenture to begin with unless we wanted to attach ordinary people to that legal "person" or "status" when they do bad  
36 works?

37 7. It is not schizophrenia to NOT recognize ROLES that each of us play in society, or the agency, obligations, and rights  
38 that legally attach to those roles. It's reality. Most people are not aware of this legal dimension of reality because they are  
39 legally ignorant. That legal ignorance is the main method by which they are victimized by covetous lawyers in government  
40 and a corrupted legal profession. Arguing against recognizing this dimension of how we all interact with each other in the  
41 legal realm is simply making you and everyone who follows you ripe for exploitation, because that is how you were  
42 recruited into the franchise scam to begin with, often without your knowledge.



A franchise is simply a legal vehicle to describe each role, and the rights and obligations that attach to each role. That role is called “agency” in the legal field. Each instance of agency has a specific name, such as “believer”, “taxpayer”, “citizen”, “resident”, “driver”, “spouse”, “benefit recipient”, etc. This is the SAME “name” or “voice” Jesus is talking about below:

*Jesus the True Shepherd*

*“Most assuredly, I say to you, he who does not enter the sheepfold by the door, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he who enters by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the doorkeeper opens, and the sheep hear his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. And when he brings out his own sheep, he goes before them; and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice. Yet they will by no means follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers.”*  
*[John 10: 1-6, Bible, NKJV]*

The role that we play within all franchises, including the Bible, is a function of who specifically we are talking to or communicating with or “serving” and how we represent our identity to that person. In the above scripture the context is Jesus talking to the Church, which is symbolized by the sheep. In family and personal relations, the switch in roles is invisible as we naturally interact with each other. That constant changing of roles is usually done subconsciously and is invisible to the Average American, but in the legal field it is quite visible and consciously done.

7.1. In commercial law, we act in a representative capacity if we put “Agent” or indicate a title near our signature.

7.2. When interacting with governments, we act in a representative capacity if we put a Social Security Number on the form or the form itself identifies our status, such as “U.S. Individual Income Tax Return”.

Either of the above means cause us to be treated legally as if we are serving in a franchise role or “status” or “civil status” at that specific time in the context of ONLY that relationship. Until you recognize and completely understand these legal mechanisms and consistently apply them and challenge those who FORCE you into them, you will be a slave to usurers and extortionists in what Mark Twain calls “the District of Criminals”. All you do by avoiding recognizing them or arguing with us about them is put a big target on your back saying “hit me” or “rape me” to any lawyer who is watching.

8. Our logic is not black and white, but recognizes the grey we all engage in AT THE MACRO LEVEL. At the MICRO level, however, that grey, is a mixture of black AND white, good and sin, agents of Satan and agents of God in the context of each interaction.

If you can't distinguish black from white because of your ignorance, then the pixels at a distance look grey. You are PRESUMED to be ignorant and therefore observing from the distance if you can't distinguish the individual pixels. Up close under a microscope, however, there are individual pixels that are individually black and individually white. You obviously aren't ready to look through the microscope yet and approach this logically or scientifically. That's OK, because we all start out in this world wet, naked, ignorant, and alone. You can't in fact do that until you can make yourself and your own personal agenda, the works of the flesh such as the financial needs you immediately have transparent. That is the only way you can clearly see the WHOLE picture up close, pixel by pixel, and how the black and white pixels work together to produce grey. That inability is why the “mystery of lawlessness” continues: because our collective ignorance on the subject protects it and makes the lawless part invisible or indistinguishable to us.

*“For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.”*  
*[2 Thess. 2:7-12, Bible, NKJV]*

The “delusion” they are talking about above can only be sustained by the presence of legal ignorance. Our main enemy is that ignorance and the complacency, laziness, and narcissism that creates and maintains it.

This is not an attack on you personally, and until you quit seeing it this way and look at this unemotionally and rationally, you will not see the lawlessness as clearly as Jesus when He attacked the Pharisees. You will not see the true and pure evil

(the BLACK) that is the enemy. That enemy is found in each of us throughout out life, and when we do Satan's will, we are all his agents. As Satan's agents or "agents of Satan", we are OUTSIDE the protections of God's law because we are outside His delegation order in the Bible.<sup>17</sup> That is what God means when He says in the Bible that he "hides his face" and when Jesus calls people "lawless". That delegation order is to God's trustees, who are His family, His agents, and His representatives on Earth. Having such agents from a legal perspective in most cases is the only way the Kingdom of Heaven can be found and represented on earth. See:

"Kingdom of Heaven" Defined in Scripture, Exhibit #01.014

<http://sedm.org/Exhibits/ExhibitIndex.htm>

If God has no representatives or "agents" or "officers" on Earth under His Bible trust indenture, then Satan is in COMPLETE control of the Earth and everyone is HIS agent rather than God's.

The First Commandment not to serve other Gods found in Exodus 20 exactly refers to this agency. The act of serving other Gods usually BEGINS with consent or contract. The act of contracting, in fact, is how ALL agency is created and recognized in the legal realm. That is why God says you shall NOT contract with foreigners, pagans, or by implication "agents of Satan".

"You shall make no covenant [contract or franchise] with them [foreigners, pagans], nor with their [pagan government] gods [laws or judges]. They shall not dwell in your land [and you shall not dwell in theirs by becoming a "resident" or domiciliary in the process of contracting with them], lest they make you sin against Me [God]. For if you serve their [government] gods [under contract or agreement or franchise], it will surely be a snare to you."  
[Exodus 23:32-33, Bible, NKJV]

"Awake, awake, O Zion, clothe yourself with strength. Put on your garments of splendor, O Jerusalem, the holy city. The uncircumcised and defiled will not enter you again. Shake off your dust; rise up, sit enthroned, O Jerusalem [Christians]. Free yourself from the chains [contracts and franchises] on your neck, O captive Daughter of Zion. For this is what the LORD says: "You were sold for nothing [free government cheese worth a fraction of what you had to pay them to earn the right to "eat" it], and without money you will be redeemed."  
[Isaiah 52:1-3, Bible, NKJV]

"I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I swore to your fathers; and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And you shall make no covenant [contract or franchise or agreement of ANY kind] with the inhabitants of this [corrupt pagan] land; you shall tear down their [man/government worshipping socialist] altars.' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?"

"Therefore I also said, 'I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as thorns [terrorists and persecutors] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!] to you.'"

So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voices and wept.  
[Judges 2:1-4, Bible, NKJV]

'For among My [God's] people are found wicked [covetous public servant] men; They lie in wait as one who sets snares; They set a trap; They catch men. As a cage is full of birds, So their houses are full of deceit. Therefore they have become great and grown rich. They have grown fat, they are sleek; Yes, they surpass the deeds of the wicked; They do not plead the cause, The cause of the fatherless [or the innocent, widows, or the nontaxpayer]; Yet they prosper, And the right of the needy they do not defend. Shall I not punish them for these things?' says the Lord. 'Shall I not avenge Myself on such a nation as this?'

"An astonishing and horrible thing Has been committed in the land: The prophets prophesy falsely, And the priests [judges in franchise courts that worship government as a pagan deity] rule by their own power; And My people love to have it so. But what will you do in the end?"  
[Jer. 5:26-31, Bible, NKJV]

<sup>17</sup> That delegation order is described using scripture in: Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007; <https://sedm.org/Forms/13-SelfFamilyChurchGovnce/DelOfAuthority.pdf>.

1  
2  
3       *"The Lord is well pleased for His righteousness' sake; **He will exalt the law and make it honorable. But this is***  
4       ***a people robbed and plundered! All of them are snared in [legal] holes [by the sophistry of greedy***  
5       ***government lawyers], and they are hidden in prison houses; they are for prey, and no one delivers; for***  
6       ***plunder, and no one says, "Restore!"***

7       ***Who among you will give ear to this? Who will listen and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for***  
8       ***plunder, and Israel to the robbers? Was it not the Lord, He against whom we have sinned? For they would***  
9       ***not walk in His ways, nor were they obedient to His law,*** therefore He has poured on him the fury of His anger  
10       *and the strength of battle; it has set him on fire all around, yet he did not know; and it burned him, yet he did*  
11       *not take it to heart."*  
12       *[Isaiah 42:21-25, Bible, NKJV]*

13 It appears that you may not clearly understand the law of agency. For a quick refresher, we strongly recommend the following:

<p>14       <u><i>Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises</i></u>, Form #05.030, Section 8: Introduction to the Law of Agency 15       <a href="http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm">http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm</a></p>
---

16       **THEIR RESPONSE:**

17 Let me be direct. You said that anyone who "participates" in a franchise is an "agent of Satan" (a noun, a person who acts on behalf of and in the stead of Satan), that is one who participates in franchising is "of the Devil." You have not yet retracted that statement. Isn't this correct?

18 Furthermore, you made a statement that everyone who does good is of God and everyone who does evil is of the Devil . . . and you have created a 824 page booklet dedicated to explaining how evil franchises are and that franchises ["on the list"] are of the Devil. Isn't this correct?<sup>18</sup>

19 [Don't hear what is not being said. I'm not justifying franchises. My objection is how Scripture is used to condone or condemn an action and the conclusion drawn.]

20 Scripture is clear that

21       *"he that committeth sin (franchising, idolatry) is of the Devil . . . for it is evident who are the children of God,*  
22       *and who are the children of the Devil . . . and (those of the Devil) hath no eternal life abiding in him,"*

23 in other words, the Scripture teaches that agents of Satan are going to hell! (1 John 3:4-15)

24 So, if your theological premises are correct that everyone who participates in franchising is an agent of Satan, it stands to reason they are going to hell!!! (Yes, I know you didn't say this. But, it is the logical conclusion our major and minor premise). I used this to illustrate the unsoundness of your premise that those who participate in an "on the list" franchise are agents of Satan.

25 After all, there are only two kinds of people in the world: children of light or children of darkness; sons of God or sons of Satan, Christians or non-Christians, those in the Spirit and those in the flesh, members of a church or members in the Synagogue of Satan, those in the franchise of the Kingdom of God, and those in the kingdom of this world.

26 Secondly, I disagree with your theological, existential foundation and your bold comprehensive theological conclusion that a person can be both an Agent of Satan and an Agent of God.

27 The logical conclusion of your dichotomous view of franchises is that . . .

- 28 3. Everyone who participates in a marriage license franchise is an agent of Satan.  
29 4. Everyone who participates in the driver's license franchise is an agent of Satan.

30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  

---

<sup>18</sup> See: *Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises*, Form #05.030; <https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Franchises.pdf>.

- 1 5. Everyone who participates in a corporation franchise is an agent of Satan.
- 2 6. Everyone who participates in public school franchises is an agent of Satan.
- 3 7. Every church that participates in a "tax-exempt" franchise is an agent of Satan.
- 4 8. Everyone who has a social security card is an agent of Satan.
- 5 9. Everyone who promotes/participates in government health care "privileges" is an agent of Satan.
- 6 10. Everyone that has ever signed a government benefit or franchise form, 1040 or otherwise, is an agent of Satan.

7 Excuse me, "Anything not in the above list is NOT an act of idolatry." It seems to me you have made the sin of  
8 "franchising, as a participant" the Eleventh Commandment:

9 *"Thou shall not participate in franchises offered by the government (on my list)"*

10 So, in your theological world, anyone participating in something on the list "is an agent of Satan." Wow! More dogmatism!

11 I know you do not intend for people to conclude this from your research . . . your last email expresses more accurate  
12 thinking. But, you are so dogmatic and emphatic, it leads to a fanatical conclusion that everyone who participates in  
13 franchises are of the Devil . . . and going to hell, or that Christians are spiritual schizoids that can be "agents of Satan" and  
14 "agents of Christ" at the same time:

15 *"It's not black and white, but Grey . . ."*

16 I reject both the conclusion and the premise on which your work is built:

17 *"that everyone who participates in franchises 'on the list' is an agent of Satan."*

18 Shared as a friend, not an enemy.

## 19 **OUR RESPONSE:**

20 What do you think the following means from a moral perspective, and why does Paul warn people to "work with your own  
21 hands" and avoid taking from others to support yourself? Wasn't he talking about socialism there?

22 *A Brotherly and Orderly Life*

23 *But concerning brotherly love you have no need that I should write to you, for you yourselves are taught by God*  
24 *to love one another; and indeed you do so toward all the brethren who are in all Macedonia. But we urge you,*  
25 *brethren, that you increase more and more; that you also aspire to lead a quiet life, to mind your own*  
26 *business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you, that you may walk properly toward those*  
27 *who are outside, and that you may lack nothing.*  
28 *[1 Thess. 4: 9-12, Bible, NKJV]*

29 "Those who are outside" are the foreigners, meaning everyone not other than your own kin and family, it seems to us. God  
30 has a LOT to say about how to interact with the "foreigners" in the pagan state that he is referring to.

- 31 1. We clearly have a problem with definitions and the law of agency, just like most lawyers do.
- 32 2. One of the worst sins in the Bible is described as the act essentially of consenting to fornicate with foreigners and  
33 pagans. Franchises, which are contracts, are the main method of doing that in the modern era. They are a SUBSET of a  
34 greater sin:

35 *I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I*  
36 *swore to your fathers; and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And you*  
37 *shall make no covenant [contract or franchise or agreement of ANY kind] with the*  
38 *inhabitants of this [corrupt pagan] land; you shall tear down their [man/government*  
39 *worshipping socialist] altars.' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?*

40 *"Therefore I also said, 'I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as*  
41 *thorns [terrorists and persecutors] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!]*  
42 *to you.'"*

So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel,  
that the people lifted up their voices and wept.  
[Judges 2:1-4, Bible, NKJV]

---

"Do you not know that friendship with the world is enmity with God? **Whoever therefore wants to be a friend ["citizen", "resident", "taxpayer", "inhabitant", or "subject" under a king or political ruler] of the world [or any man-made kingdom other than God's Kingdom] makes himself an enemy of God.** "  
[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]

---

"**You shall make no covenant [contract or franchise] with them [foreigners, pagans], nor with their [pagan government] gods [laws or judges]. They shall not dwell in your land [and you shall not dwell in theirs by becoming a "resident" in the process of contracting with them], lest they make you sin against Me [God]. For if you serve their gods [under contract or agreement or franchise], it will surely be a snare to you.**"  
[Exodus 23:32-33, Bible, NKJV]

---

"Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world [the obligations and concerns of the world]. "  
[James 1:27, Bible, NKJV]

---

"You shall have no other gods [including political rulers, governments, or Earthly laws] before Me [or My commandments]."  
[Exodus 20:3, Bible, NKJV]

---

3. You have confused the AGENT with those private humans filling the OFFICE or ROLE of the agent. Christians don't stop sinning AFTER they become Christians or AFTER they accept the role of "Trustees" or "agents" of God in the Bible trust indenture. That role is an office. Like any office, you can be ON DUTY or OFF DUTY.

4. When you accept a job, you are an "employee" while AT work, and a HUSBAND, FATHER (another role or office) off duty. You can't be a "husband" when you talk to your employer or an "employee" when you talk to your wife.

5. When you are talking to your wife, you do so within the agency of HUSBAND. When your wife dies, then you surrender that office and the "benefits" and obligations attached to that office.

6. Likewise, Christians can act as both TRUSTEES of God when ON duty, and agents of Satan when OFF duty. An example of going OFF duty is what people do when no one is watching or when they commit sin "in secret" or outside the "view" or "knowledge" of people that they share a "role" or "office" with. Even Christians do this. That is what the fig leaf in Genesis was a symbol of: being OFF duty and therefore UNACCOUNTABLE and IRRESPONSIBLE and lawless. Those who are "lawless", meaning "off duty", are outside the protections of God's law and therefore NOT acting as "trustees" or "officers" of God under the Bible trust indenture. Being off duty or lawless is how most of us invite problems into our life. Being "off duty" is what I describe as being an "agent of Satan".

7. Your quote of 1 John 3:4-15 is very interesting and relevant to this great discussion, and is a useful tool for discussion. What I take away from that passage is:

7.1. Jesus said we are all sinners and that there is not one righteous man.

7.2. 1 John 3:3-8 says

"He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. "

Christians do not stop sinning AFTER they become Christians, and therefore, they are still "of the devil" when they sin. HOWEVER, the trick is that they are not "Christians" or agents or even "persons" while they are sinning because they are not the subject of the franchise when they are off duty.

7.3. Being "of the devil" means OUR PHYSICAL BODY is an "agent of Satan".



1 7.4. The "new man" Paul talks about recognizes a new "Office" or "role" created by God when we accept Christ. That  
2 OFFICE is perfect and forgiven and incapable of being "of the devil" or an "agent of Satan".

3 7.5. The "office" of believer is incapable of being "of the devil" because the office is virtual and not physical and the devil  
4 can only act on physical things. The devil's spirit will be destroyed in the Lake of Fire mentioned in Revelation, so he can  
5 only affect a physical world that itself will also be destroyed.

6 7.6. 1 John 3:9 says

7 *"Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has*  
8 *been born of God."*

9 7.7. The definition of "born of God" or "whoever" in the previous step can only mean the OFFICE or ROLE of "believer"  
10 that is perfect and sinless, not the physical human filling it. The human is imperfect and continues in sin but the role or  
11 office is perfect. "born of God" implies an act of CREATION, and the role or status of "believer" or "whoever" was created  
12 and defined by God in the Bible itself. Remember that God is "the word" in James 1, meaning "law". That means he is  
13 virtual rather than physical. Law itself is virtual, but it acts of the physical, and God is Law. James 1.

14 7.8. To accept Jesus in a legal sense means that AFTER we die, our spirit will continue and we will always be regarded as  
15 an officer and trustee of God. The actions and consequences of those actions of us as private sinful physical humans while  
16 OFF DUTY and LAWLESS BEFORE we die will die with our body. The OFFICE or ROLE that God created lives on, but  
17 the OFFICER filling the role dies when their body dies.

18 8. In effect, God through the Bible is offering liability insurance for the actions of those who are "off duty", lawless, and  
19 therefore "agents of Satan". Jesus is God's "liability insurance salesman". Rousas Rushdoony describes this insurance  
20 franchise below:

21 <http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/Articles/UnlimitedLiabilityUniverse.htm>

22 9. The sin continues after we become believers in varying degrees. Physical bodies continue to be agents of Satan, because  
23 only physical things can sin. The OFFICE or ROLE, which is NOT a physical but a virtual thing, however, is incapable of  
24 sinning and so the sin cannot be imputed to it. The sin attaches to the physical human and not the office. By "virtual" we  
25 mean what lawyers would call "artificial entity" or "fiction of law". It's like saying that your "employer" won't hold you  
26 accountable for what you do in the context of your OTHER role as "HUSBAND" because he didn't create that role and  
27 therefore doesn't control who exercises it or HOW they exercise it. Any attempt to control or enforce upon a role you  
28 didn't create is the very definition of "injustice".

29 PAULSEN, ETHICS (Thilly's translation), chap. 9.

30 ***"Justice, as a moral habit, is that tendency of the will and mode of conduct which refrains from disturbing***  
31 ***the lives and interests of others, and, as far as possible, hinders such interference on the part of others.*** This  
32 *virtue springs from the individual's respect for his fellows as ends in themselves and as his co equals. The*  
33 *different spheres of interests may be roughly classified as follows: body and life; the family, or the extended*  
34 *individual life; property, or the totality of the instruments of action; honor, or the ideal existence; and finally*  
35 *freedom, or the possibility of fashioning one's life as an end in itself. The law defends these different spheres,*  
36 *thus giving rise to a corresponding number of spheres of rights, each being protected by a prohibition. . . . To*  
37 *violate the rights, to interfere with the interests of others, is injustice. All injustice is ultimately directed against*  
38 *the life of the neighbor; it is an open avowal that the latter is not an end in itself, having the same value as the*  
39 *individual's own life. The general formula of the duty of justice may therefore be stated as follows: Do no wrong*  
40 *yourself, and permit no wrong to be done, so far as lies in your power; or, expressed positively: Respect and*  
41 *protect the right."*

42 *[Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Second Edition, Roscoe Pound, 1925, p. 2]*

43

44 *"The makers of our Constitution undertook to secure conditions favorable to the pursuit of happiness. They*  
45 *recognized the significance of man's spiritual nature, of his feelings and of his intellect. They knew that only a*  
46 *part of the pain, pleasure and satisfactions of life are to be found in material things. They sought to protect*  
47 *Americans in their beliefs, their thoughts, their emotions and their sensations. **They conferred, as against the***  
48 ***Government, the right to be let alone - the most comprehensive of rights and the right most valued by***  
49 ***civilized men.**"*

[*Olmstead v. United States*, 277 U.S. 438, 478 (1928) (Brandeis, J., dissenting) ; see also *Washington v. Harper*, 494 U.S. 210 (1990)]

Government can only control or tax or regulate that which they create. It didn't create the physical human but it did create the OFFICE of "taxpayer" and "person" that the human fills usually by fraud and deception. See:

*Hierarchy of Sovereignty: The Power to Create is the Power to Tax*, Family Guardian Fellowship  
<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Taxes/Remedies/PowerToCreate.htm>

10. The U.S. Supreme Court talks about this same dichotomy between the VIRTUAL OFFICE and the PHYSICAL OFFICER in the context of government in *Poindexter. v. Greenhow*, 114 U.S. 270

[https://scholar.google.com/scholar\\_case?case=3335705609810307048](https://scholar.google.com/scholar_case?case=3335705609810307048)

In the above case, they distinguish the "State" from the "Government" as two separate entities. In Christian terms, the "Government" is the physical body and the "State" is the role or office filled BY the physical body.

If even the U.S. Supreme Court acknowledges this dichotomy, don't you think that we should when we are thinking LEGALLY about something? If God is in fact LAW as James 1 says, shouldn't we apply this concept to God and His Kingdom and his limited liability Bible franchise "code"? Government and God are both "fictions of law". They are not PHYSICAL things but VIRTUAL and IDEAL things or "fictions of law", just like the Supreme Court says in *Poindexter* above in the case of government.

11. The bottom line is that 1 John 3 establishes in essence that once we become Christians:

11.1. We continue to sin in some degree, but our sin becomes "invisible" to God and "compartmentalized" away from God.

11.2. God will not pay attention to what we do as his OFFICERS while we are off duty and therefore "lawless" AFTER we die.

11.3. We can still choose to be "off duty" and lawless, even as Christians. When we do, God will be "blind" to our sin because He isn't allowed to supervise the activities of Christians (agents of God) who are off duty because they bought "liability insurance" through "faith".

11.4. The consequences of the sin cannot be enforced under the Bible franchise AFTER we die but will continue to be felt and are inevitable while we are still alive, even as Christians. You can't repeal natural law or the law of gravity, even by being forgiven by God.

11.5. To those secular people who are NOT Christians, or God's "agents", Christians who sin are at least "agents of evil" when they sin. Non-Christians don't call it "agents of Satan", but that's what it means to non-Christians, in practical effect. Non-Christians don't have to honor the liability insurance program so they aren't prohibited from calling it "agents of evil", or "agents of Satan", but that's what it REALLY is for those who are "off duty" or "lawless" such as non-believers. We have to speak in their terms if we want them to join our liability insurance program called "the cross", right? And if we don't rebuke evil for what it is as Christians, and especially if Christians do it, aren't we no better than the Pharisees that Jesus was furious with for exactly the same reasons?

12. On the other hand, there is a disconnect in your approach.

12.1. To this day and throughout history, churches excommunicate members all the time.

12.2. Adultery and fornication are the most frequent causes of excommunication.

12.3. The act of excommunication essentially extinguishes the "benefits" or "privileges" of the liability insurance program and therefore the "role" or "civil status" that those benefits attach to of "believer" or "member".

1 12.4. Those who are excommunicated are, by definition, "lawless" and "agents of Satan" and therefore NOT the subject of  
2 1 John 3. The law only protects those who are WITHIN its bounds, and lawless ones are NOT within its bounds, as we have  
3 already pointed out.

4 12.5. In early American history, some were even burned at the stake as witches. That would be impossible if 1 John 3 were  
5 literally true in a physical sense.

6 13. Therefore, I rest my case and have proven that Christians can be "agents of Satan" when they are "off duty" and not  
7 obeying their delegation of authority order. In that capacity, they aren't the subject of ANY of the scripture you reference  
8 and therefore AREN'T protected by them. In that sense, being "lawless" really means they:

9 13.1. Are not believers.

10 13.2. Refuse to obey every aspect of their delegation order. Meaning they don't want to ACT like believers.

11 13.3. Refuse to acknowledge any part of that delegation order as law for them. In effect, they want to rewrite their  
12 delegation order.

13 14. Your use of the term "everyone" at the end of your previous remarks only includes those who CLAIM to be Christians  
14 but refuse to act like them and therefore are effectively lying about their status. They are "lawless", off duty, and mere  
15 secular humans because God doesn't allow real Christians to contract with or fornicate with The Beast, as we pointed out  
16 earlier.<sup>19</sup>

17 14.1. The mere act of contracting so as to make the person you are contracting with ABOVE you or ABOVE or EQUAL to  
18 God, or to violate your delegation order from God in effect DISESTABLISHES the OFFICE or ROLE of "Christian" in the  
19 context of all interactions relating TO that contract. All contracts produce and enforce AGENCY, and Jesus said on this  
20 subject:

21 *"No servant [or religious ministry or biological person] can serve **two masters**; for either he will hate the one*  
22 *and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. **You cannot serve God and***  
23 ***mammon [government].**"*  
24 *[[Luke 16:13](#), Bible, NKJV]*

25 By "servant" above, God can only mean AGENT, or more particularly HIS AGENT, meaning "Christians" who are  
26 faithfully and PERFECTLY obeying their delegation order. In the context of government, the U.S. Supreme Court calls  
27 this "the State". Two contracts that conflict with each other destroy or undermine the agency that each separately creates.  
28 By "conflict" we mean force you to do what is prohibited or prohibit you from doing what you are commanded in the  
29 OTHER contract.

30 14.2. On the other hand, Jesus said:

31 *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, **but he who does the will of My***  
32 ***Father in heaven.**"*  
33 *[Jesus in [Matt. 7:21](#), Bible, NKJV]*

34 Do you think there will be SOME people who at least CLAIM to be "Christians" who will NOT enter Heaven, and would  
35 THOSE people be called "agents of Satan"?

36 *I Never Knew You*

---

<sup>19</sup> "I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I swore to your fathers; and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And **you shall make no covenant [contract or franchise or agreement of ANY kind] with the inhabitants of this [corrupt pagan] land; you shall tear down their [man/government worshipping socialist] altars.**' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?"

*"Therefore I also said, **I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as thorns [terrorists and persecutors] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!] to you.**"*

*So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voices and wept.*  
*[Judges 2:1-4, Bible, NKJV]*

1                   *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My*  
2                   *Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out*  
3                   *demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?' And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew*  
4                   *you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'*  
5                   *[Matt. 7:21-23, Bible, NKJV]*

6       There are LOTS of people who CLAIM to be Christians but who insist on violating their delegation of authority order and  
7       being off duty and lawless ALL THE TIME or even MOST OF THE TIME. Don't these people deserve a name of "agents  
8       of Satan" and a method to warn them of their disobedience? Isn't it heresy NOT to talk about these people? Why even  
9       have a law if our "politically correct language" doesn't allow it to be enforced or implemented against those who are the  
10      ONLY people who claim to be the subject of it in the first place? Isn't this the essence of "lawlessness"? Isn't a  
11      "Christian" someone who recognizes the Bible as a "law book" for THEM?

12     14.3. Many Christians even act out what you call "schizophrenia" or "multiple personalities" by keeping God in a cage  
13     called "church" and visiting Him only once a week, and being off duty the OTHER six days of the week. They  
14     compartmentalize God. Compartmentalization is a favorite tactic of government to keep the sheep warring amongst  
15     themselves so they can never confront the sins of their rulers. Through this compartmentalization, many "lukewarm  
16     Christians", as Jesus calls them, limit and define who God is allowed to be in their life and thereby make THEMSELVES  
17     the real God. This is covered in the following series of sermons:

Redefining Religion, Newbreak.org  
<http://newbreak.org/resources/messages/redefining-religion/character-redescribed>

18     At home these "schizoid" Christians with "multiple personality disorder" are secular socialists for nearly all intents and  
19     purposes, and when they go to church, they put on their best cloths and "act" the part but are hypocrites just like the  
20     Pharisees that Christ got REALLY angry at. Your "politically correct language" forbids us from recognizing that this is  
21     happening or assigning legal consequences to it under God's law. Why don't we just acknowledge that they do this by just  
22     defining what capacity they are acting in when they willfully choose to violate their delegation of authority order described  
23     below?:

Delegation of Authority Order from God to Christians, Form #13.007  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

24     15. For the purposes of your references to 1 John 3:4-9:

25                   **Sin and the Child of God**

26                   *Whoever commits sin also commits lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness. And you know that He was manifested*  
27                   *to take away our sins, and in Him there is no sin. Whoever abides in Him does not sin. Whoever sins has neither*  
28                   *seen Him nor known Him.*

29                   *Little children, let no one deceive you. He who practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous. He*  
30                   *who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was*  
31                   *manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil. Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His*  
32                   *seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.*

33     15.1. The definitions of the terms "whoever commits sin" or "he who commits sin", for the purposes of our discussion  
34     includes ONLY:

35     15.1.1. Private humans who are secular.

36     15.1.2. Christians who are NOT perfectly satisfying all the obligations of the role of "Christian" and therefore "off duty",  
37     but STILL alive and therefore physical.

38     15.1.3. Speech about those participating in franchises in front of a secular audience who are not parties to the scripture  
39     even when used to describe the actions of those who at least profess to BE "Christians" but who are violating their  
40     delegation order. In that context the term "Satan" in the phrase "agent of Satan" can only mean "agent of Evil" because  
41     that's how secular people would reasonably view it.

42     15.2. The term "you" as used in the above scripture includes:

- 1 15.2.1. Those already in Heaven.
- 2 15.2.2. Those who are faithfully and perfectly satisfying all the obligations of the role of the ideal "Christian" and therefore  
3 NOT "sinning" or violating their delegation order.
- 4 15.2. The term "you" as used in the above scripture does NOT include:
- 5 15.2.1. Christians (agents of God) who are sinning, because that office isn't allowed to sin and therefore the OFFICER  
6 can't be on duty.
- 7 15.2.2. Christians (agents of God) who act like secular people. If it acts like a duck and quacks like a duck, THEN IT'S A  
8 DUCK. Jesus says "I never knew you" of these people. Therefore, the term "you" as used in the scripture isn't talking to  
9 THEM.
- 10 15.2.3. Those who claim to be Christians but who don't recognize BOTH the Old Testament or the New Testament as law  
11 FOR THEM. In other words, they are lawless and HAVE NO DELEGATION ORDER. Jesus says "I never knew you" of  
12 these people. Therefore, the term "you" as used in the above scripture isn't talking to THEM. It's talking to the IDEAL or  
13 PERFECT Christian, not to those who insist on being off duty at any point in time, and especially if they are off duty six  
14 days a week.

15 Quod Erat Demonstrandum (Q.E.D.)  
16 <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Q.E.D.>

17 **THEIR RESPONSE:**

18 I am in basic agreement about the evils of government franchises and see many of their weaknesses, but this is not the issue  
19 to me.

20 Here is where I think you are dead wrong. You are saying if a person (Christian, sheep, etc.) partakes of a franchise benefit  
21 that SEDM does not approve, he is of Satan, and appears that he can't be part of the club? Humm?

22 Do you make the same demands on your spouse that you make on your members? Is your spouse partaking in government  
23 franchises? Is he or she an agent of Satan? Please have your spouse call me. I want to talk to them!!

24 Do you make the same demands on your church or your pastor that you make on your members? I guess your pastor is an  
25 agent of Satan. Have him/her call me. I want to talk to him about one of his members.

26 As to the original premise that all those who partake of franchises are instruments of Satan, this is my final word. There are  
27 wheat and tares, sheep and goats, Christians and non-Christians, servants of God and servants of Satan. A Christian cannot  
28 be both a child of God and a child of Satan; and Agent of God (noun) and an Agent of Satan (noun). While participation in  
29 some government programs are unwise and in some cases unbiblical, to participate does not make one an agent of Satan!  
30 (This I believe). A Christian doesn't cease being a child of God even when he behaves badly or does something you do not  
31 approve. He doesn't change his status from being an Agent of God when he commits the horrible, disgusting wretched sin  
32 of participating in a government program (satire). Likewise an "agent of Satan" doesn't become an "agent of God" when he  
33 acts like you wants him to.

34 Here is a criticism: Instead of informing people about the truth and helping them walk their way through the barnyard  
35 without stepping in a pile of government franchise doo doo, you took the Bible out and started beating the sheep into  
36 submission with graceless dogmatism that borders on fanaticism.

37 Furthermore, you even quoted a heretical Bible translation to support his conclusions. John Berger said:

38 *"Fanaticism comes from any form of chosen blindness accompanying the pursuit of a single dogma"*

39 **OUR RESPONSE:**



1 1. The pastor at the church we go to readily admits that he frequently sins and that his life is “messy” as he calls it. During  
2 those times, we can only conclude that he is acting in a private capacity, outside the protection of God’s law as an agent  
3 of Satan. He calls it sin and that’s what we mean by “agent of Satan”.

4 You imply that you want to talk with this pastor about one of his/her members. Well guess what. You couldn’t talk to him  
5 about us, because we refuse to be a member for the very reason of the censored truth he refuses to talk about or act upon in  
6 his own church.

7 2. This is such an important and central issue that it needed to be thoroughly vetted. Forgive us but we’re on a mission.  
8 Not our mission, but God’s mission to liberate the modern Israelites from the modern Pharaoh. By that we mean the  
9 modern American and the corrupt pagan legal profession and government he has become enslaved to, respectively.  
10 Pharaoh was not the first person in the Bible to try to enslave people using franchises or privileges or “benefits”. The first  
11 person was, in fact, Nimrod, who established the first city of Babel and who the Bible called “a mighty hunter”. The thing  
12 that he hunted was MEN! Do you see a pattern here?

13 3. This document is not addressed to non-members, a spouse, or even my pastor. Instead it is intended ONLY for  
14 Members who:

15 3.1. Have demonstrated full knowledge of the subject matter over a long period of years and participation in our forums.

16 3.2. Abused the "privileges" of receiving our help to enrich themselves and enrich and help the enemy we are fighting, just  
17 like Satan. They took a government job and became a money launderer for the STOLEN tax money that they fought  
18 against.

19 3.3. Have said or proven specifically that they REFUSE to apply ANY of the knowledge they gained from our site to  
20 improve any of the problems they are exhaustively and thoroughly aware of because of our materials. Only when it profits  
21 them PERSONALLY will they do it, for the same despicable reasons that the modern Pharisee lawyers pursue their  
22 licensed and privileged profession: the love of money and personal gain.

23 4. This document is not for general consumption by people who Jesus called on the cross "for they know not what they  
24 do". It is intended for PRIVILEGED knowledgeable people just like the Satan we mention in section 9 who sinned with full  
25 knowledge and to benefit ONLY himself while injuring God and His people (us). A new member shouldn’t and wouldn’t  
26 read this and shouldn’t expect that it is even targeted toward them.

27 5. The point of reference is not what we believe or expect but what God expects. It would be idolatry and worshipping a  
28 man for us to make this a personal crusade. The point of reference or standard or “ruler” to measure our success by is  
29 obviously God’s law. What God expects is documented in what He told the Israelites who He tried to free from slavery to  
30 Pharaoh. They grudgingly left slavery to Pharaoh and were given a death sentence for grumbling against Moses who tried  
31 to free them from a franchise. Numbers 14:26-38. During the exodus from slavery, they even made a golden calf, which  
32 was symbolic of putting their property and wealth in the custody and control of a pagan ruler, as we showed earlier in  
33 section 10. The grumbling of the Israelites in the Moses story is the same kind of grumbling we am now hearing from you  
34 and from everyone who complains about God’s serious calling to confront the evil on this subject.

35 6. Pharaoh could be interpreted in the Moses story merely as symbolic of enslavement using privileges, benefits, and/or  
36 franchises. Pharaoh was the grantor of the franchise and the Egyptians were the unwitting “customers” who lined up like  
37 lemming jumping off a cliff instead of leaving Egypt on their own. We sincerely believe this is the case in modern society  
38 based on our description of who Satan is in section 9 earlier. That privilege was made possible by the famine and the  
39 complacency of the Egyptians in refusing to prepare for the calamity of a famine. It enslaved the entire country of Egypt.  
40 Why would God call people like Moses to free a small subset of these franchise enslaved people (the Israelites) and send  
41 plagues on the grantor of the franchise if He didn’t think it was evil or the work of the devil or if He didn’t think that  
42 Pharaoh was acting as an “agent of Satan” in that case? If God wasn’t fighting the Devil or “agents of the Devil” (Pharaoh)  
43 in that particular case, who was He really fighting? Himself? There are only TWO choices. In the Moses famine story,  
44 Pharaoh is even referred to as “my lord”, meaning the equivalent of a pagan deity, just like Satan wanted to be and was  
45 cursed for wanting to be. Gen. 47.

1 7. What we really meant by "agents of Satan" is sin. In Latin the word "sin" means to be "without". The thing that sinners  
2 are "without" is both the protection of God's law and God himself. In other words, they abandoned their office or post as  
3 "Christians" and are acting in a private, personal capacity as "agents of Satan". Every time we act in a private or personal  
4 capacity, we are "agents of Satan" and engaging in "works of the flesh". The only reason we used the phrase "agents of  
5 Satan" at all is to stir up enough passion in people to study the subject of agency that is precisely the vehicle to produce the  
6 slavery to begin with. Whatever it takes to get people riled up enough about the subject to get them motivated to study it  
7 carefully and actually APPLY IT in their own defense is a good thing. People are so narcissistic and passive these days that  
8 this seems to be the only way to wake them up. It serves a useful purpose, not a malicious one. That tactic worked in  
9 spades with you, so we'll continue it. "Sticks and stones can break my bones but words can never hurt me (or you)".

10 8. You have indicated that some pastors would never agree with us on this subject. That statement is pregnant with the  
11 presumption that pastors will always tell everything they honestly think about the sensitive subjects we cover or that  
12 everything they say is always unfiltered, complete, and truthful. Did that apply to the "pastors" that tried, convicted, and  
13 hanged JESUS? NOT!

14 We don't think that pastors either always tell everything they think or believe or that they always tell the full truth. As a  
15 matter of fact, the fact that they don't always tell the whole truth or avoid confrontational aspects of the truth that we cover  
16 is how things got so corrupted to begin with. The "gag" they wear to silence them is in fact the 501(c)(3) exemption and  
17 franchise privilege. See:

*The Crisis of Church Incorporation*, Form #13.017  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

18 Your experience in preparing yourself for your profession as a pastor in all the years of valuable schooling you took on  
19 theology and the absence of most of the controversial subjects we cover from that curriculum is proof that the entire  
20 profession avoids the truth or that they don't want to address all of it, for fear of scaring away the sheep or lowering their  
21 tithes or attracting government ire. Mammon is important, after all, but pastors NEVER care about that, now do they? And  
22 these are issues that it would be difficult to get ANY pastor to talk about, much less our pastor.

23 Telling us that we should seek the advice of a pastor whose profession you left in disgust because you couldn't find anyone  
24 with integrity is proof of why we shouldn't go asking such people for answers or expect the whole truth from them. All we  
25 will get is a "politically correct" filtered answer engineered not to instigate any real debate, improvement, or real change.  
26 Why rock the boat?

27 9. The ONLY audience for this document is NOT people who are just stumbling on our site or who haven't joined, but for  
28 those who have been with us many years and who left and did a complete 180 U-turn for completely selfish, narcissistic,  
29 and almost psychopathic reasons. Those people need to be rebuked strongly, not people who don't know the truth. Jesus  
30 said even from the cross to forgive the people who DON'T know the truth, but this guy was the epitome, like Satan earlier  
31 in section 9. of someone privileged who made a fully informed decision with a fully informed understanding as good as our  
32 own, to do a 180 degree U-turn. Perhaps we need to clarify that better in the document.

33 We would never apply the standards in this document to anyone close to us who doesn't have full knowledge or is not a  
34 member. That includes the people you specifically mentioned. See section 1 of this document for proof.

35 10. As the Bible says, the judgment of God BEGINS in the house of the Lord. 1 Peter 4:17. Likewise, the judgment of  
36 members and those who are agents of God called "members" against apostate members who need to be excommunicated  
37 begins in the ministry against those members. As we say in section 1 of this document, any group that does not enforce its  
38 own laws against its own members is not a true religion, but just a vain social club that is truly lawless as Jesus used that  
39 word.

40 The measure of punishment that judges impose on litigants before them is the degree of "willfulness" with which they  
41 commit the crime they are being sentenced for. The target of this document is the epitome of willfulness and therefore  
42 maliciousness. Your comments indirectly suggest that willfulness is legally impossible because you rebuke acts of  
43 enforcement against the most egregious cases of maliciousness and willfulness. To do so indirectly is an act of lawlessness

that protects rather than punishes willful disobedience. Why even have a “law” or define God Himself as law in James 1 if that law can NEVER be enforced or executed by those who claim to represent Him? Ludicrous.

Even Christians will be judged at the white throne judgment. Therefore willfulness will be a component in determining their “benefit” in the Heaven franchise. It will determine the room they get in what Jesus called “the house of many mansions”. That’s the second dimension of Christianity that few pastors want to talk about but which really does at least theologically exist. Here is one pastor talking about it:

Naughty and Nice, Newbreak.org  
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FpmitlCJ53E>

God does say that even for so-called “Christians”, there is such a thing as an unforgivable sin. This document describes the equivalent of that unforgivable sin in terms of members. Read section 12 earlier about a person who willfully and with full knowledge and “privilege” engaged in that sin. The following scripture documents the nature of “unforgiveable” sin from God’s perspective.

**The Peril of Not Progressing**

*Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary principles of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, 2 of the doctrine of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. 3 And this we will[a] do if God permits.*

**For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame.**

*For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God; but if it bears thorns and briers, it is rejected and near to being cursed, whose end is to be burned.”*  
[Hebrews 6:1-7, Bible, NKJV]

Your refusal to judge the unforgivable sin itself could be described as falling in the category of unforgivable sin based on the above. How can a group that won’t judge its own members according to its own rules ever “progress” at all?. If it can’t progress, it can’t repent, can’t improve, and is “dead faith” of the kind that James refers to. The hallmark of whether a person is a “successful member” is the degree to which they APPLY our teachings to their REAL life, 24 hours a day, 7 days a week. Here is what Jesus’ brother said on the subject of OBEYING such “rules” and therefore ACTING like a REAL member:

**“He who has [understands and learns] My commandments [laws in the Bible (OFFSITE LINK)] and keeps them, it is he who loves Me.** And he who loves Me will be loved by My Father, and I will love him and manifest Myself to him.”  
[John 14:21, Bible, NKJV]

*“And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. **God is love, and he who abides in love [obedience to God’s Laws] abides in [and is a FIDUCIARY of] God, and God in him.**”*  
[1 John 4:16, Bible, NKJV]

*“Now by this we know that we know Him [God], if we **keep** His commandments. He who says, “I know Him,” and does not **keep** His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps His word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in Him [His fiduciaries]. He who says he abides in Him [as a fiduciary] ought himself also to walk just as He [Jesus] walked.”*  
[1 John 2:3-6, Bible, NKJV]

Where there is no fruit, there need be no membership or fellowship.

*“By their fruits ye shall know them”.*  
[Matt. 7:15-20, Bible, NKJV]

No fruit and the vine needs to be chopped down and burned just like the above scripture in Hebrews 6:1-7 says. The only reason NOT to do this that we are aware of is a bad reason. That reason is because when a member leaves, the group loses

its “tithes” or “revenues”. But we know what the Bible says about the love of money, now don’t we? And isn’t that reason one of the major problems with most privileged churches?

Fanaticism can be a virtue when all of your enemies are so fanatical that they have taken hundreds of years to perfect a human trap and enslavement mechanism that is so elaborate and so carefully concealed with “words of art” that it is nearly impossible for the average person to recognize without the same degree of fanaticism that crafted the trap they find themselves in:

*“Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves. Therefore be wise as serpents and harmless as doves. But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to councils and scourge you in their synagogues. You will be brought before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, do not worry about how or what you should speak. For it will be given to you in that hour what you should speak; for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you.”*  
[Matt 10:16-20, Bible, NKJV]

*“Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established, should not be changed for light and transient causes; and, accordingly, all experience [has] shown that mankind are more disposed to suffer while evils are sufferable than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But, when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce [the people] under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security.”*  
[Thomas Jefferson: Declaration of Independence, 1776. ME 1:29, Papers 1:429]

### **13.2 Aren’t I receiving my own money back plus interest? How can that be theft?**

The U.S. Supreme Court held that:

1. All payments into Social Security are just another type of tax and do NOT go into any kind of savings or annuity program.
2. Social Security is NOT a contract and the government is NOT legally obligated to PAY the participants ANYTHING.

For the plain truth on this subject, read the following:

*“... railroad benefits, like social security benefits, are not contractual and may be altered or even eliminated at any time.”*  
[United States Railroad Retirement Board v. Fritz, [449 U.S. 166](#) (1980)]

*“The Social Security system may be accurately described as a form of social insurance, enacted pursuant to Congress’ power to “spend money in aid of the `general welfare,’” *Helvering v. Davis*, *supra*, at 640, whereby persons gainfully employed, and those who employ them, are taxed to permit the payment of benefits to the retired and disabled, and their dependents. “*  
[Flemming v. Nestor, [363 U.S. 603](#), 610, 80 S.Ct. 1367 (1960)]

*“We must conclude that a person covered by the Act has not such a right in benefit payments... This is not to say, however, that Congress may exercise its power to modify the statutory scheme free of all constitutional restraint.”*  
[Flemming v. Nestor, [363 U.S. 603](#) (1960)]

We don’t care how you SEE it. You are ONLY allowed to view the program as the U.S. Supreme Court describes it. Court rulings are legal evidence. BELIEFS are not. It doesn’t matter how many years you paid in. The government STILL isn’t legally obligated to pay you anything and whatever they do pay you HAS to come from CURRENT payments into the system, not some mysterious “lock box” that idiot politicians like Al Gore try to lie about the existence of.

### **13.3 Isn’t it uncharitable or legalistic to deny charity to the aged and deserving?**

Thieves belong in jail, not in your bible study, your circle of friends, or your church. They will only serve as bad examples. Here is what God’s law says to do with thieves:

*“If a man delivers to his neighbor money or articles to keep, and it is stolen out of the man’s house, if the thief is found, he shall pay double. If the thief is not found, then the master of the house shall be brought to the judges to see whether he has put his hand into his neighbor’s goods.”*  
[Exodus 22:7-8, Bible, NKJV]

Charity has nothing to do with thievery. Force and charity are completely incompatible with each other. You can't sanction, condone, protect, or subsidize institutionalized government theft as a jurist, voter, or taxpayer and at the same time not be a thief yourself. When King David commanded others to kill the husband of Bathsheba in the Bible, David was held accountable by God for murder personally. 2 Sam. 11. Government is your agent as a jurist or voter. You are responsible for what it does because it (at LEAST according to your LYING politicians) works for you. That is what Abraham Lincoln's description of American government means when he calls it "a government OF the people, BY the people, and FOR the people". If government is a thief, and it is your agent, then YOU are the thief. This is a basic law of agency in the legal field. It's just like the distributive law in mathematics. If A=B and B=C, then A=C. Any attempt to make God's law "politically correct" by packaging sin in euphemistic terms is a direct mutiny against God.

Yes, there is room for charity, for helping the old, widows, and orphans, but the ONLY proper forum in which to conduct that charity are churches, PRIVATE charities, and families in a VOLUNTARY rather than ENFORCED context. God forbids governments to engage in charity because all they do is turn it into a franchise scam or Ponzi Scheme. We talk about this in detail earlier in section 10. Did you miss that discussion?

### **13.4 Isn't it judgmental to call the benefits people receive "stealing"?**

Any amount of money taken from someone without their voluntary consent is stealing. Ask the average young person if:

1. They would stop contributing to Social Security and/or Medicare if they were protected in that choice and could keep their money.
2. Whether they think they will collect anything in benefits when they are ready to retire.

The UNIVERSAL answer to the above to questions is YES and NO respectively. Hence, anything collected from them is STEALING. It doesn't matter who does the stealing and whether the thief is called "government" or some other name. The consequence is still the same. For an excellent video segment on this subject, see:

Message to the Voting Cattle, Larken Rose  
<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=t5FNDRgPOLs>

In any truly free system, everyone is equal in the eyes of REAL law. Since franchises produce equality, they are not real law and instead are PRIVATE law. We prove this is true in:

Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

Hence, governments can have no more power or authority than a single human being. If I can't steal money from my neighbor, then I can't delegate that authority to any group, even if that group is called "government":

*"There is no such thing as a power of inherent sovereignty in the government of the United States .... In this country sovereignty resides in the people, and Congress can exercise no power which they have not, by their Constitution entrusted to it: All else is withheld."*  
[*Julliard v. Greenman*, 110 U.S. 421 (1884)]

*"The Government of the United States is one of delegated powers alone. Its authority is defined and limited by the Constitution. All powers not granted to it by that instrument are reserved to the States or the people."*  
[*United States v. Cruikshank*, 92 U.S. 542 (1875)]

*"The sovereignty of a state does not reside in the persons who fill the different departments of its government, but in the People, from whom the government emanated; and they may change it at their discretion. Sovereignty, then in this country, abides with the constituency, and not with the agent; and this remark is true, both in reference to the federal and state government."*  
[*Spooner v. McConnell*, 22 F. 939, 943]

---

*Nemo dat qui non habet. No one can give who does not possess. Jenk. Cent. 250.*

*Nemo plus juris ad alienum transfere potest, quam ispe habent. One cannot transfer to another a right which he has not. Dig. 50, 17, 54; 10 Pet. 161, 175.*



1 *Nemo potest facere per alium quod per se non potest. No one can do that by another which he cannot do by*  
2 *himself.*

3 *Qui per alium facit per seipsum facere videtur. He who does anything through another, is considered as doing it*  
4 *himself. Co. Litt. 258.*

5 *Quicquid acquiritur servo, acquiritur domino. Whatever is acquired by the servant, is acquired for the master.*  
6 *15 Bin. Ab. 327.*

7 *Quod per me non possum, nec per alium. What I cannot do in person, I cannot do by proxy. 4 Co. 24.*

8 *What a man cannot transfer, he cannot bind by articles.*

9 *[Bouvier's Maxims of Law, 1856]*

10 *SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/Publications/BouvierMaximsOfLaw/BouviersMaxims.htm>]*

11 Any attempt to protect the thieves called “socialist voters” or “socialist jurists” from the consequences of their theft is a  
12 criminal conspiracy to obstruct justice. Any attempt to call any group that does this a “government” is FRAUD. A group  
13 that does this is a mafia, not a government.

14 The problem is not the COLLECTION of the benefit, but the ENFORCEMENT of payment FOR the benefit by people who  
15 don't want to participate. The money has to be STOLEN to pay the benefit. Anyone who collects stolen money, protects  
16 the stealing as a jurist or voter, or subsidizes its collection as a taxpayer is in conspiracy to commit theft. If you are going  
17 to collect a benefit and ENFORCE its payment, then you are a thief. Charity and force are completely incompatible. Here  
18 is what the Bible says about how charity should be administered, and government shouldn't administer it. God is talking  
19 here to PEOPLE, not to governments:

20 *'If one of your brethren becomes poor [desperate], and falls into poverty among you, then you shall help*  
21 *him, like a stranger or a sojourner, that he may live with you.*

22 *Take no usury or interest from him;* but fear your God, that your brother may live with you.

23 *You shall not lend him your money for usury, nor lend him your food at a profit.*

24 *I am the LORD your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan and to be*  
25 *your God.*

26 *'And if one of your brethren who dwells by you becomes poor, and sells himself to you, you shall not compel*  
27 *him to serve as a slave.*

28 *As a hired servant and a sojourner he shall be with you, and shall serve you until the Year of Jubilee.*

29 *And then he shall depart from you—he and his children with him—and shall return to his own family. He shall*  
30 *return to the possession of his fathers.*

31 *For they are My servants, whom I brought out of the land of Egypt; they shall not be sold as slaves.*

32 *You shall not rule over him with rigor,* but you shall fear your God.  
33 *[Lev. 25:35-43, Bible, NKJV]*

34 “You shall not rule over him with rigor” really means you cannot FORCE or ENFORCE the payment into the system that  
35 subsidizes the “benefit”. It HAS to be voluntary, and people have to be protected in NOT contributing or government  
36 becomes a THIEF.

37 *“You know that those who are considered rulers over the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones*  
38 *exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among*  
39 *you shall be your servant. And whoever of you desires to be first shall be slave of all. For even the Son of*  
40 *Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.”*  
41 *[Mark 10:42–45, Bible, NKJV. See also Matt. 20:25-28]*

42 Lastly, if you are one of those Christians who has the false idea that the Bible forbids judging, then you need to read and  
43 rebut the following:

Instead, the original Mosaic law says that when a thief is found, then he shall repay his/her victim DOUBLE what he stole. You can't sentence a person as such UNTIL you have JUDGED them to be a THIEF. Criminals and thieves should be shunned and isolated from society. That's what jails are for.

*"If a man delivers to his neighbor money or articles to keep, and it is stolen out of the man's house, if the thief is found, **he shall pay double.**"*  
*[Exodus 22:7, Bible, NKJV]*

### **13.5 Can you help me? I want to continue receiving socialist benefits but no longer want to be subject to federal jurisdiction**

The following question relates to socialist benefits and appears in our Frequently Asked Questions (FAQs) page:

#### **Question 1.17:**

I want to continue receiving Social Security, Medicare, SSI, or other government checks or "benefits" but also no longer want be subject to federal jurisdiction or venue or be a "taxpayer". Can you help?

#### **Answer 1.17:**

You are asking for an impossibility and we simply can't and won't help you in any way:

1. You want dependency and sovereignty at the same time. This is impossible.
2. You want to collect money from the government that you aren't willing to earn by paying taxes. In effect, you want something for nothing. Since the government doesn't produce anything and you aren't willing to pay your way, indirectly that choice compels them to become a thief on your behalf, and the people they are going to STEAL from are mainly those who don't want to participate. That means US! We can't aid or abet thieves.
3. You want rights without the responsibilities that give rise to them. All rights originate from duties and responsibilities to a higher power. If you don't believe in God, then that higher power is the government.
4. You want to receive "public funds" as a "private person", which is illegal and constitutes embezzlement in violation of [18 U.S.C. §641](#). The only people who can lawfully receive "public funds" are public officers. Otherwise, you are converting "public property" to "private use", which is a polite way of saying that you are STEALING government funds. One must be a "[public officer](#)" in order to receive "public funds", and "[public officers](#)" are the main "taxpayers" under Internal Revenue Code, Subtitle A. Those who are "public officers" are "U.S. persons" pursuant to [26 U.S.C. §7701\(a\)\(30\)](#) and we can't help or educate any "U.S. person" without violating the [SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001](#).
5. You are asking us to help you continue receiving money unlawfully from the government, even if you were a "public officer". The definition of "[State](#)" in the Social Security Act (see [42 U.S.C. §1301\(a\)\(1\)](#)) does NOT include states of the Union. No one domiciled in a state of the Union can lawfully collect Social Security and it is a [violation of the separation of powers doctrine](#), treason, and a violation of the Social Security Act if they do. See the following for details:

*Why You Aren't Eligible for Social Security*, Form #06.001  
<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

6. You are violating the law by asking to receive a "benefit" while being unwilling to reimburse the government for every penny you receive in "benefits". You MUST pull your own weight. Social Security is NOT a "trust fund" or an investment. Everything goes from hand-to-hand and the so-called "lock box" is full of IOU's, not your money. The government cannot lawfully abuse its taxing power to redistribute wealth, but only to pay for its own employees and agents in the official execution of their constitutionally authorized duties. You therefore must become part of the government and subject to their jurisdiction to receive any kind of benefit from them.

*"The Government urges that **the Power Company is estopped to question the validity of the Act creating the Tennessee Valley Authority**, and hence that the stockholders, suing in the right of the corporation, cannot [297 U.S. 323] maintain this suit. .... **The principle is invoked that one who accepts the benefit of a statute cannot be heard to question its constitutionality.** *Great Falls Manufacturing Co. v. Attorney General*, 124 U.S. 581;*



1 Wall v. Parrot Silver & Copper Co., 244 U.S. 407; St. Louis Casting Co. v. Prendergast Construction Co.,  
2 260 U.S. 469.  
3 [Ashwander v. Tennessee Valley Auth., [297 U.S. 288](#) (1936)]

---

5 CALIFORNIA CIVIL CODE  
6 DIVISION 3. OBLIGATIONS  
7 PART 2. CONTRACTS  
8 CHAPTER 3. CONSENT  
9 [Section 1589](#)

10 1589. A voluntary acceptance of the benefit of a [government benefit] transaction is equivalent to a consent to  
11 all the obligations [and legal liabilities] arising from it, so far as the facts are known, or ought to be known, to  
12 the person accepting.

13 We cover the subject of the government "benefits" in the following publication. In that publication, we conclude that all  
14 such programs are Ponzi schemes that injure rather than improve society.  
15 The Government "Benefits" Scam, Form #05.040

- 16 1.  [Sample](#)  
17 2.  [Click here \(Member Subscriptions\)](#), 426 Kbytes) to view the very important form. SEDM Form #05.040. Requires  
18 free [Adobe Acrobat Reader](#) version 7.0 or later.  
19 3. [Member Subscriptions](#)-how to gain access to this brief

20 If you want to know all the obligations which arise out of participating in the Social Security program, why it is EVIL and  
21 unlawful, and why and how to quit, see:

- 22 1. Resignation of Compelled Social Security Trustee, Form #06.002  
23 <http://sedm.org/Forms/06-AvoidingFranch/SSTrustIndenture.pdf>  
24 2. Social Security: Mark of the Beast, Form #11.407 (OFFSITE LINK)  
25 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

26 Can't you see how irrational it is to ask us to help you? Freedom and sovereignty BEGIN with COMPLETE, TOTAL, and  
27 PERSONAL RESPONSIBILITY for every aspect of oneself. OWNERSHIP and RESPONSIBILITY are inseparable and  
28 ALWAYS go together. If you want to OWN yourself, you must take RESPONSIBILITY for yourself. As long as you are  
29 eating out of anyone's hand, including the government, then the only choice you have is to lick the hand that feeds you.  
30 You can't be half pregnant or half free.

31 "If a nation expects to be ignorant [or dependent on anyone] and free... it expects what never was and never  
32 will be."  
33 [Thomas Jefferson]

---

35 "Government big enough to supply everything you need is big enough to take everything you have. The course  
36 of history shows that as a government grows, liberty decreases."  
37 [Thomas Jefferson]

---

39 Mr. Logan: "...Natural laws can not be created, repealed, or modified by legislation. Congress should know  
40 there are many things which it can not do..."

41 "It is now proposed to make the Federal Government the guardian of its citizens. If that should be done, the  
42 Nation soon must perish. There can only be a free nation when the people themselves are free and administer  
43 the government which they have set up to protect their rights. Where the general government must provide  
44 work, and incidentally food and clothing for its citizens, freedom and individuality will be destroyed and  
45 eventually the citizens will become serfs to the general government..."  
46 [Congressional Record-Senate, Volume 77- Part 4, June 10, 1933, Page 12522;  
47 SOURCE: [http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/Sovereignty-CongRecord-Senate-](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/Sovereignty-CongRecord-Senate-JUNE101932.pdf)  
48 [JUNE101932.pdf](http://famguardian.org/TaxFreedom/CitesByTopic/Sovereignty-CongRecord-Senate-JUNE101932.pdf)]

The beginning of the [Federal and State Income Taxation of Individuals Course, Form #12.003](#) says we can't lawfully help people steal and that is what you are asking us to help you do. Our [SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001](#) also says we can't help "taxpayers" and that is what you are if you are receiving Social Security benefits. [26 U.S.C. §871\(a\)\(3\)](#) says that Social Security Benefits constitute "gross income" and therefore are taxable. Our [SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001](#) also says you won't ask us to violate any enacted law or help you violate any law, which is what you are asking us to do. We *strongly discourage* all "taxpayers" and [government "benefit" recipients](#) from becoming members or from using our materials because they are both synonymous and those who fit this category would be unlawfully interfering with the administration of the internal revenue laws by using our materials without satisfying all of the criteria for being a Member. Unless and until you completely disassociate with THE BEAST that has become our de facto lawless government by sending in the [Resignation of Compelled Social Security Trustee, Form #06.002 document](#) above, we can't and won't help you because you are a "taxpayer", whether you know it or not. Sending in this document is also a mandatory requirement of Section 2.2 of our [SEDM Member Agreement, Form #01.001](#). On this subject, the Bible says:

*"Come out of her, my people, lest you share in her sins, and lest you receive her plagues. For her [our corrupted de facto WHORE government] sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities. [Rev. 18:1-8, Bible, NKJV]*

### **13.6 Why won't you help me enforce statutory privileges under a franchise rather than common law rights? Don't you claim to want to help people obey the law?**

#### **QUESTION:**

I am a REAL public officer in the U.S. military. I am trying to adopt a status under a government franchise and enforce statutory privileges against the government under the franchise. You claim that you want to educate people about the "law", and yet you refuse to help me enforce franchise law. Why is this?

#### **ANSWER:**

Very good question and thanks for submitting it. Thank you for risking your life to defend our country.

First of all, the ONLY thing that licensed attorneys do is help government idolaters participate in statutory franchises and enforce privileges under these franchises. They neither know nor enforce common law or equity. There is plenty of overpriced help from them and if you want government privileges, please go back to the franchise cage and become an economic slave hiring one to help you. We only help people here who want to be TRULY free and outside of the government franchise cage entirely.

Furthermore, what you propose to follow is not "LAW" as classically defined, but STATUTES that implement franchises. Even a Harvard law professor, Roscoe Pound, agrees with us on this subject. What he calls "compact" is synonymous with what franchises and contracts are. The basis of the subject he is discussing is the COMMON LAW, which is founded entirely upon ABSOLUTE EQUALITY of ALL:

*Municipal law, thus understood, is properly defined to be "a rule of civil conduct prescribed by the supreme power in a state, commanding what is right and prohibiting what is wrong."*

*[. . .]*

*It is also called a rule to distinguish it from a compact or agreement; **for a compact is a promise proceeding from us, law is a command directed to us.** The language of a compact is, "I will, or will not, do this"; that of a law is, "thou shalt, or shalt not, do it." It is true there is an obligation which a compact carries with it, equal in point of conscience to that of a law; but then the original of the obligation is different. **In compacts we ourselves determine and promise what shall be done, before we are obliged to do it; in laws, we are obliged to act without ourselves determining or promising anything at all.** Upon these accounts law is defined to be "a rule."*

*[Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Second Edition, Roscoe Pound, 1925, p. 4]*

REAL LAW respects and protects the ABSOLUTE EQUALITY of all under God's law and the supreme law. Franchises DESTROY equality and make the government into a supernatural power and parens patriae, but ALL are equal under God's law. Even President Obama said so in his inauguration speech! Are you gonna call him a liar? We'd probably agree with you if you did!

Consistent with the discussion above, our Disclaimer also defines the word “law” to exclude franchises. Perhaps you missed this:

## **SEDM Disclaimer**

### **4. Meaning of Words**

#### **4.8. Law**

The term "law" as used on this site is constrained by the following requirements:

1. It must apply equally to ALL. It cannot compel INEQUALITY of treatment between any man or class of men. See [Form #05.033](#).
2. It cannot do collectively what people individually cannot NATURALLY do. In other words, in the words of [Frederic Bastiat](#), it aggregates the individual right of self-defense into a collective body so that it can be delegated. A single human CANNOT delegate a right he does not individually ALSO possess, which indirectly implies that no GROUP of men called “government” can have any more COLLECTIVE rights under the collective entity rule than a single human being. See the following for a video on the subject.

*Philosophy of Liberty*, SEDM

<https://sedm.org/liberty-university/liberty-university-2-2-philosophy-of-liberty/>

3. It cannot punish a citizen for an innocent action that was not a crime or not demonstrated to produce measurable harm. The ability to PROVE such harm with evidence in court is called “standing”.
4. It cannot compel the redistribution of wealth between two private parties. This is ESPECIALLY true if it is called a “tax”.
5. It cannot interfere with or impair the right of contracts between PRIVATE parties. That means it cannot compel income tax withholding unless one or more of the parties to the withholding are ALREADY public officers in the government.
6. It cannot interfere with the use or enjoyment or CONTROL over private property, so long as the use injures no one. Implicit in this requirement is that it cannot FAIL to recognize the right of private property or force the owner to donate it to a PUBLIC USE or PUBLIC PURPOSE. In the common law, such an interference is called a “trespass”.
7. The rights it conveys must attach to LAND rather than the [CIVIL STATUS](#) (e.g. “taxpayer”, “citizen”, “resident”, etc.) of the people ON that land. One can be ON land within a PHYSICAL state WITHOUT being legally “WITHIN” that state (a corporation) as an [officer of the government or corporation \(Form #05.042\)](#) called a “citizen” or “resident”. See:
  - 7.1. [Your Exclusive Right to Declare or Establish Your Civil Status, Form #13.008](#).  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/13-SelfFamilyChurchGovnce/RightToDeclStatus.pdf>
  - 7.2. [Foundations of Freedom Course, Form #12.021, Video 4](#) covers how LAND and STATUS are deliberately confused through equivocation in order to [KIDNAP people’s identity \(Form #05.046\)](#) and transport it illegally to federal territory.  
(“It is locality that is determinative of the application of the Constitution, in such matters as judicial procedure, and not the status of the people who live in it.” [Balzac v. Porto Rico, 258 U.S. 298 (1922)])  
[https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hPWMfa\\_oD-w](https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=hPWMfa_oD-w)
8. It must provide a remedy AFTER an injury occurs. It may not PREVENT injuries before they occur. Anything that operates in a PREVENTIVE rather than CORRECTIVE mode is a franchise. There is no standing in a REAL court to sue WITHOUT first demonstrating such an injury to the PRIVATE or NATURAL rights of the Plaintiff or VICTIM.
9. It cannot acquire the “force of law” from the consent of those it is enforced against. In other words, it cannot be an agreement or contract. All franchises and licensing, by the way, are types of contracts.
10. It does not include compacts or contracts between private people and governments. Rights that are INALIENABLE cannot be contracted away, even WITH consent. See [Form #05.003](#).
11. It cannot, at any time, be called “voluntary”. Congress and even the U.S. Supreme Court call the IRC Subtitle a “income tax” voluntary. See Exhibits [#05.025](#) and [#05.051](#).



12. It does not include franchises, licenses, or civil statutory codes, all of which derive ALL of their force of law from your consent in choosing a [civil domicile \(Form #05.002\)](#).

The above criteria derives from [What is "law"?, Form #05.048, Section 16](#). Any violation of the above rules is what the Bible calls "devises evil by law" in Psalm 94:20-23 as indicated above.

Roman statesman Cicero defined law as follows:

"[True Law](#) is right reason [in agreement with Nature](#), it is of universal application, unchanging and everlasting; it summons to duty by its commands and averts from wrong-doing by its prohibitions. And it does not lay its commands or prohibitions upon good men in vain, although neither have any effect upon the wicked. It is a sin to try to alter this law, nor is it allowable to try to repeal a part of it, and it is impossible to abolish it entirely. We cannot be freed from its obligations by Senate or People, and we need not look outside ourselves for an expounder or interpreter of it. And there will not be different laws at Rome or at Athens, or different laws now and in the future, but one [eternal and unchangeable law](#) will be valid for all times and all nations, and there will be one master and one rule, that is God, for He is the author of [this law](#), its promulgator, and its enforcing judge."

[Marcus Tullius Cicero, 106-43 B.C.]

"Power and law are not synonymous. In truth, they are frequently in opposition and irreconcilable. There is [God's Law](#) from which [all equitable laws of man](#) emerge and by which men must live if they are not to die in oppression, chaos and despair. Divorced from [God's eternal and immutable Law](#), established before the founding of the suns, man's power is evil no matter the noble words with which it is employed or the motives urged when enforcing it. Men of good will, mindful therefore of the [Law laid down by God](#), will oppose governments whose rule is by men, and if they wish to survive as a nation they will destroy the [de facto government](#) which attempts to adjudicate by the whim of venal judges."

[Marcus Tullius Cicero, 106-43 B.C.]

"Law" is defined to EXCLUDE any and all [civil statutory codes, franchises, or privileges](#) in relation to any and all governments and to include ONLY the COMMON law, the CONSTITUTION (if trespassing government actors ONLY are involved), and the CRIMINAL law.

*The Court developed, for its own governance in the cases confessedly within its jurisdiction, a series of rules under which it has avoided passing upon a large part of all the constitutional questions pressed upon it for decision. They are:*

[. . .]

**6. The Court will not pass upon the constitutionality of a statute at the instance of one who has availed himself of its benefits.**[FN7 Great Falls Mfg. Co. v. Attorney General, 124 U.S. 581, 8 S.Ct. 631, 31 L.Ed. 527; Wall v. Parrot Silver & Copper Co., 244 U.S. 407, 411, 412, 37 S.Ct. 609, 61 L.Ed. 1229; St. Louis Malleable Casting Co. v. Prendergast Construction Co., 260 U.S. 469, 43 S.Ct. 178, 67 L.Ed. 351.](#)

#### FOOTNOTES:

[FN7 Compare Electric Co. v. Dow, 166 U.S. 489, 17 S.Ct. 645, 41 L.Ed. 1088; Pierce v. Somerset Ry., 171 U.S. 641, 648, 19 S.Ct. 64, 43 L.Ed. 316; Leonard v. Vicksburg, etc., R. Co., 198 U.S. 416, 422, 25 S.Ct. 750, 49 L.Ed. 1108.](#)

[\[Ashwander v. Tennessee Valley Authority, 297 U.S. 288, 56 S.Ct. 466 \(1936\)\]](#)

*Municipal law, thus understood, is properly defined to be "a rule of civil conduct prescribed by the supreme power in a state, commanding what is right and prohibiting what is wrong."*

[. . .]

*It is also called a rule to distinguish it from a compact or agreement; **for a compact is a promise proceeding from us, law is a command directed to us.** The language of a compact is, "I will, or will not, do this"; that of a law is, "thou shalt, or shalt not, do it." It is true there is an obligation which a compact carries with it, equal in point of conscience to that of a law; but then the original of the obligation is different. **In compacts we ourselves determine and promise what shall be done, before we are obliged to do it; in laws, we are obliged to act without ourselves determining or promising anything at all.** Upon these accounts law is defined to be "a*

rule."  
[Readings on the History and System of the Common Law, Second Edition, Roscoe Pound, 1925, p. 4]

---

"The words "privileges" and "immunities," like the greater part of the legal phraseology of this country, have been carried over from the law of Great Britain, and recur constantly either as such or in equivalent expressions from the time of Magna Charta. For all practical purposes they are synonymous in meaning, and originally signified a peculiar right or private law conceded to particular persons or places whereby a certain individual or class of individuals was exempted from the rigor of the common law. Privilege or immunity is conferred upon any person when he is invested with a legal claim to the exercise of special or peculiar rights, authorizing him to enjoy some particular advantage or exemption."  
[The Privileges and Immunities of State Citizenship, Roger Howell, PhD, 1918, pp. 9-10;  
SOURCE:  
[http://famguardian.org/Publications/ThePrivAndImmOfStateCit/The\\_privileges\\_and\\_immunities\\_of\\_state\\_c.pdf](http://famguardian.org/Publications/ThePrivAndImmOfStateCit/The_privileges_and_immunities_of_state_c.pdf)  
]

---

#### FOOTNOTES:

See Magill v. Browne, Fed.Cas. No. 8952, 16 Fed.Cas. 408; 6 Words and Phrases, 5583, 5584; A J. Lien, "Privileges and Immunities of Citizens of the United States," in Columbia University Studies in History, Economics, and Public Law, vol. 54, p. 31.

---

"What, then, is [civil] legislation? It is an assumption [presumption] by one man, or body of men, of absolute, irresponsible dominion [because of abuse of sovereign immunity and the act of "CONSENT" by calling yourself a "citizen"] over all other men whom they call subject to their power. It is the assumption by one man, or body of men, of a right to subject all other men to their will and their service. It is the assumption by one man, or body of men, of a right to abolish outright all the natural rights, all the natural liberty of all other men; to make all other men their slaves; to arbitrarily dictate to all other men what they may, and may not, do; what they may, and may not, have; what they may, and may not, be. It is, in short, the assumption of a right to banish the principle of human rights, the principle of justice itself, from off the earth, and set up their own personal will [society of men and not law], pleasure, and interest in its place. All this, and nothing less, is involved in the very idea that there can be any such thing as human [CIVIL] legislation that is obligatory upon those upon whom it is imposed [and ESPECIALLY those who never expressly consented in writing]."  
[Natural Law, Chapter 1, Section IV, Lysander Spooner;  
SOURCE: <http://famguardian.org/PublishedAuthors/Indiv/SpoonerLysander/NaturalLaw.htm>]

The above methods of REMOVING the protections of the common law and the constitution from the INALIENABLE rights [rights that CANNOT lawfully be given away, even WITH consent] that are protected by them has been described by the U.S. Congress as the ESSENCE of communism itself! This is especially true when you add games with legal words of art to remove even the STATUTORY limitations upon the conduct of the government. See [Legal Deception, Propaganda, and Fraud, Form #05.014](#).

TITLE 50 > CHAPTER 23 > SUBCHAPTER IV > Sec. 841.  
Sec. 841. - Findings and declarations of fact

The Congress finds and declares that the Communist Party of the United States [consisting of the IRS, DOJ, and a corrupted federal judiciary], although purportedly a political party, is in fact an instrumentality of a conspiracy to overthrow the [de jure] Government of the United States [and replace it with a de facto government ruled by the judiciary]. It constitutes an authoritarian dictatorship [IRS, DOJ, and corrupted federal judiciary in collusion] within a [constitutional] republic, demanding for itself the rights and [FRANCHISE] privileges [including immunity from prosecution for their wrongdoing in violation of Article I, Section 9, Clause 8 of the Constitution] accorded to political parties, but denying to all others the liberties [Bill of Rights] guaranteed by the Constitution [Form #10.002]. Unlike political parties, which evolve their policies and programs through public means, by the reconciliation of a wide variety of individual views, and submit those policies and programs to the electorate at large for approval or disapproval, the policies and programs of the Communist Party are secretly [by corrupt judges and the IRS in complete disregard of, Form #05.014, the tax franchise "codes", Form #05.001] prescribed for it by the foreign leaders of the world Communist movement [the IRS and Federal Reserve]. Its members [the Congress, which was terrorized to do IRS bidding by the framing of Congressman Traficant] have no part in determining its goals, and are not permitted to voice dissent to party objectives. Unlike members of political parties, members of the Communist Party are recruited for indoctrination [in the public FOOL system by homosexuals, liberals, and socialists] with respect to its objectives and methods, and are organized, instructed, and disciplined [by the IRS and a corrupted

judiciary] to carry into action slavishly the assignments given them by their hierarchical chieftains. Unlike political parties, the Communist Party [thanks to a [corrupted federal judiciary](#)] [acknowledges no constitutional or statutory limitations upon its conduct or upon that of its members \[ANARCHISTS!, Form #08.020\]](#). The Communist Party is relatively small numerically, and gives scant indication of capacity ever to attain its ends by lawful political means. The peril inherent in its operation arises not from its numbers, but from its failure to acknowledge any limitation as to the nature of its activities, and its dedication to the proposition that the present constitutional Government of the United States ultimately must be brought to ruin by any available means, including resort to force and violence [or using income taxes]. Holding that doctrine, its role as the agency of a hostile foreign power [the Federal Reserve and the American Bar Association (ABA)] renders its existence a clear present and continuing danger to the security of the United States. It is the means whereby individuals are seduced illegally KIDNAPPED via identity theft!, Form #05.046] into the service of the world Communist movement [using FALSE information returns and other PERJURIOUS government forms, Form #04.001], trained to do its bidding [by FALSE government publications and statements that the government is not accountable for the accuracy of, Form #05.007], and directed and controlled [using FRANCHISES illegally enforced upon NONRESIDENTS, Form #05.030] in the conspiratorial performance of their revolutionary services. Therefore, the Communist Party should be outlawed

The above corruption of our Constitutional Republic by the unconstitutional abuse of franchises, the violation of the rules of statutory construction, and interference with common law remedies was described by the U.S. Supreme Court as follows:

"These are words of weighty import. They involve consequences of the most momentous character. I take leave to say that if the principles thus announced should ever receive the sanction of a majority of this court, a radical and mischievous change in our system of government will be the result. We will, in that event, pass from the era of constitutional liberty guarded and protected by a written constitution into an era of legislative absolutism.

Although from the foundation of the Government this court has held steadily to the view that the Government of the United States was one of enumerated powers, and that no one of its branches, nor all of its branches combined, could constitutionally exercise powers not granted, or which were not necessarily implied from those expressly granted, [Martin v. Hunter, 1 Wheat. 304, 326, 331](#), we are now informed that Congress possesses powers outside of the Constitution, and may deal with new territory, 380\*380 acquired by treaty or conquest, in the same manner as other nations have been accustomed to act with respect to territories acquired by them. In my opinion, Congress has no existence and can exercise no authority outside of the Constitution. Still less is it true that Congress can deal with new territories just as other nations have done or may do with their new territories. This nation is under the control of a written constitution, the supreme law of the land and the only source of the powers which our Government, or any branch or officer of it, may exert at any time or at any place. Monarchical and despotic governments, unrestrained by written constitutions, may do with newly acquired territories what this Government may not do consistently with our fundamental law. To say otherwise is to concede that Congress may, by action taken outside of the Constitution, engraft upon our republican institutions a colonial system such as exists under monarchical governments. Surely such a result was never contemplated by the fathers of the Constitution. If that instrument had contained a word suggesting the possibility of a result of that character it would never have been adopted by the People of the United States. The idea that this country may acquire territories anywhere upon the earth, by conquest or treaty, and hold them as mere colonies or provinces — the people inhabiting them to enjoy only such rights as Congress chooses to accord to them — is wholly inconsistent with the spirit and genius as well as with the words of the Constitution."

[Downes v. Bidwell, [182 U.S. 244](#) (1901), Justice Harlan, Dissenting]

Civil statutory codes, franchises, or privileges are referred to on this website as "private law", but not "law". The word "public" precedes all uses of "law" when dealing with acts of government and hence, refers only to COMMON law and CRIMINAL law that applies equally to everyone, regardless of [their consent](#). Involvement in any and all ["private law" franchises or privileges](#) offered by any government ALWAYS undermines and threatens sovereignty, autonomy, and [equality](#), turns government into an [unconstitutional civil religion](#), and [corrupts even the finest of people](#). This is explained in:

[Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030](#)  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Franchises.pdf>

Any use of the word "law" by any government actor directed at us or any member, if not clarified with the words "private" or "public" in front of the word "law" shall constitute:

1. A criminal attempt and conspiracy to recruit us to be [a public officer called a "person", "taxpayer", "citizen", "resident"](#), etc.
2. A solicitation of [illegal bribes called "taxes"](#) to treat us "AS IF" we are a public officer.
3. A [criminal conspiracy to convert PRIVATE rights into PUBLIC rights](#) and to violate the Bill of Rights.

The protection of PRIVATE rights mandated by the Bill of Rights BEGINS with and requires:

1. ALWAYS keeping PRIVATE and PUBLIC rights separated and never mixing them together.
2. Using unambiguous language about the TYPE of "right" that is being protected: PUBLIC or PRIVATE in every use of the word "right". The way to avoid confusing PUBLIC and PRIVATE RIGHTS is to simply refer to PUBLIC rights as "privileges" and NEVER refer to them as "rights".
3. Only converting PRIVATE rights to PUBLIC rights with the express written consent of the HUMAN owner.
4. Limiting the conversion to geographical places where rights are NOT unalienable. This means the conversion occurred either abroad or on government territory not within the exclusive jurisdiction of a Constitutional state. Otherwise, the Declaration of Independence, which is organic law, would be violated.
5. Keeping the rules for converting PRIVATE to PUBLIC so simple, unambiguous, and clear that a child could understand them and always referring to these rules in every interaction between the government and those they are charged with protecting.
6. Ensuring that in every interaction (and ESPECIALLY ENFORCEMENT ACTION) between the government both administratively and in court, that any right the government claims to civilly enforce against, regulate, tax, or burden otherwise PRIVATE property is proven ON THE RECORD IN WRITING to originate from the rules documented in the previous step. This BURDEN OF PROOF must be met both ADMINISTRATIVELY and IN COURT BEFORE any enforcement action may be lawfully attempted by any government. It must be met by an IMPARTIAL decision maker with NO FINANCIAL interest in the outcome and not employed by the government or else a criminal financial conflict of interest will result. In other words, the government has to prove that it is NOT stealing before it can take property, that it is the lawful owner, and expressly HOW it became the lawful owner.
7. Enforcing the following CONCLUSIVE PRESUMPTION against government jurisdiction to enforce unless and until the above requirements are met:

*"All rights and property are PRESUMED to be EXCLUSIVELY PRIVATE and beyond the control of government or the CIVIL statutory franchise codes unless and until the government meets the burden of proving, WITH EVIDENCE, on the record of the proceeding that:*

*a. A SPECIFIC formerly PRIVATE owner consented IN WRITING to convert said property to PUBLIC property.*

*b. The owner was either abroad, domiciled on, or at least PRESENT on federal territory NOT protected by the Constitution and therefore had the legal capacity to ALIENATE a Constitutional right or relieve a public servant of the fiduciary obligation to respect and protect the right. Those physically present but not necessarily domiciled in a constitutional but not statutory state protected by the constitution cannot lawfully alienate rights to a real, de jure government, even WITH their consent.*

*c. If the government refuses to meet the above burden of proof, it shall be CONCLUSIVELY PRESUMED to be operating in a PRIVATE, corporate capacity on an EQUAL footing with every other private corporation and which is therefore NOT protected by official, judicial, or sovereign immunity."*

For a detailed exposition on the mandatory separation between PUBLIC and PRIVATE as indicated above, please see the following course on our site:

[Separation Between Public and Private Course, Form #12.025](https://sedm.org/LibertyU/SeparatingPublicPrivate.pdf)  
<https://sedm.org/LibertyU/SeparatingPublicPrivate.pdf>

For a detailed exposition of the legal meaning of the word "law" and why the above restrictions on its definition are important, see:

[What is "law"?, Form #05.048](https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/WhatIsLaw.pdf)  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/WhatIsLaw.pdf>

[SEDM Disclaimer, Section 4; SOURCE: <http://sedm.org/disclaimer.htm>]

Obedient Christians cannot submit or consent to any system of franchises that creates inequality because it produces idolatry that violates the Ten Commandments. For an instructive video on the subject, see:

Foundations of Freedom, Video 1: Introduction, Form #12.021

<http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

Hence, what you seek is help in committing idolatry by contracting essentially with the government Beast, and you are trying to enlist our help in essentially surrendering your sovereignty and equality to that Beast, which we cannot do. For an exhaustive treatment of your equality and why you can't and shouldn't give it up, see:

Requirement for Equal Protection and Equal Treatment, Form #05.033

FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/EqualProtection.pdf>

What you propose is anarchy and lawlessness under God's law and yet Pharisaical or humanistic idolatry under man's law. Devout Christians cannot have it both ways. Jesus is an anarchist in respect to man's laws but NOT God's laws:

Jesus Is An Anarchist, James Redford

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/Spirituality/ChurchvState/JesusAnarchist.htm>

We must choose WHOM we will serve. No man can serve two masters and that is EXACTLY what you propose. Putting obedience or allegiance to Caesar above God violates the Ten Commandments and proposes and promotes anarchy under God's law.

*"But as for me and my house, WE WILL SERVE [ONLY] THE LORD!"*

*[Josh. 24:15, Bible, NKJV]*

We are commanded to always strive for God's law order. The source of law is the God in any society. You propose to place man's law above God's law. See:

Why All Man-Made Law is Religious in Nature, Family Guardian Fellowship

<http://famguardian.org/Subjects/LawAndGovt/ChurchVState/WhyAllManmadeLawRelig.htm>

Even doing the right thing, but for the wrong reasons, is bad.

Jesus said that those who place loyalty to family or comfort above truth and righteousness are not worthy of Him, and yet these very goals are the only justifications you propose for your misplaced priorities. We have made no "ASSumptions" on this subject. The ONLY defense you have offered basically is that you don't want to be "uncool" with your family. If you have other motivations beyond this, please clearly reveal what those are, because we can't honestly think of any:

*Christ Brings Division*

*"Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword. <sup>35</sup> For I have come to 'set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law'; and 'a man's enemies will be those of his own household.' He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me. He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it."*

*[Matt. 10:34-39, Bible, NKJV; SOURCE:*

*<http://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Matthew%2010&version=NKJV>]*

By no means are you the only one with this kind of "cognitive dissonance" or logical fallacy (<https://yourlogicalfallacyis.com/>). We do not mean to single you out. This is a very common problem. Many others even in the freedom community have your same misplaced priorities and logical fallacies. This problem is not unique to you, and hence we do not intend to attack you personally on this subject.

Irwin Schiff, a famous and vocal freedom personality, for instance, beats his chest and says he should be free, and yet supports himself entirely and exclusively off a Social Security check and used that resource to essentially look his gift horse in the mouth in the courtroom before he was convicted. You can't be a government dependent and yet at the same time FALSELY CLAIM to be free, sovereign and INDEPENDENT. That is an oxymoron or what George Orwell called "doublethink". In a past conversation, he said that those who receive government benefits should be disenfranchised. When he was told that he should be included in that list as a Social Security recipient, he became completely irrational in

**Policy Document: Members Who Reenter the Franchise System**

Copyright Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry, <http://sedm.org>

Form 08.017, Rev. 8-13-2023

106 of 115

EXHIBIT: \_\_\_\_\_



defending his right to collect the plunder. In a sense, you could say he was “radicalized” in defense of socialism by criminal “bribes” that he legally isn’t entitled to receive from the very franchises that have completely destroyed nearly all constitutional rights for the average American that he was fighting for. Talk about hypocrisy.

*“The government that robs Peter to pay Paul can always count on the support of Paul.”*

*“A tax, in the general understanding of the term and as used in the constitution, signifies an exaction for the support of the government. The word has never thought to connote the expropriation of money from one group for the benefit of another.”*  
*[U.S. v. Butler, 297 U.S. 1 (1936) ]*

*“To lay, with one hand, the power of the government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to bestow it upon favored individuals to aid private enterprises and build up private fortunes, is none the less a robbery because it is done under the forms of law and is called taxation. This is not legislation. It is a decree under legislative forms.”*

*“Nor is it taxation. ‘A tax,’ says Webster’s Dictionary, ‘is a rate or sum of money assessed on the person or property of a citizen by government for the use of the nation or State.’ ‘Taxes are burdens or charges imposed by the Legislature upon persons or property to raise money for public purposes.’ Cooley, Const. Lim., 479.”*  
*[Loan Association v. Topeka, 20 Wall. 655 (1874)]*

[Schiff](#) is not alone. Many other freedom advocates we have met are committing the same kind of vain hypocrisy and “doublethink”. On the subject of such hypocrisy, consider what the Bible says:

*<sup>27</sup> “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men’s bones and all uncleanness. <sup>28</sup> Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness.”*  
*[Jesus in Matt. 23:27-28, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Let love be without **hypocrisy**. Abhor what is evil. Cling to what is good.”*  
*[Romans 12:9, Bible, NKJV]*

*“But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, willing to yield, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality and without **hypocrisy**.”*  
*[James 3:17, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Therefore, laying aside all malice, all deceit, **hypocrisy**, envy, and all evil speaking”*  
*[1 Peter 2:1, Bible, NKJV]*

*“Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees [lawyers], which is **hypocrisy**.”*  
*[Jesus in Luke 12:1, Bible, NKJV]*

Even some family members have the same problem, and it is very frustrating for us to deal with them because socialism and self-interest divides rather than unites people. The evil tendency of the flesh to put self-interest above the requirements of the law and abusing it to create conflicts of interest that deny justice is, in fact, the main tool used to corrupt governments and subvert the Constitution.

*“Where do wars and fights come from among you? Do they not come from your desires for pleasure [unearned money from the government] that war in your members [and your democratic governments]? You lust [after other people’s money] and do not have. You murder [the unborn to increase your standard of living] and covet [the unearned] and cannot obtain [except by empowering your government to STEAL for you!]. You fight and war [against the rich and the nontaxpayers to subsidize your idleness]. Yet you do not have because you do not ask [the Lord, but instead ask the deceitful government]. You ask and do not receive, because you ask amiss, that you may spend it on your pleasures. **Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that friendship [citizenship or domicile] with the world [or the governments of the world] is enmity with God?** Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world [or the governments of the world] makes himself an enemy of God.”*  
*[James 4:4, Bible, NKJV]*

This may be why the U.S. Supreme Court called socialism a “war on capital” in *Pollock v. Farmers’ Loan and Trust*. Why? Because it pits the HAVE NOTS against the HAVES, and makes the voting booth and the jury booth into the battleground.

1 *"Here I close my opinion. I could not say less in view of questions of such gravity that go down to the very*  
2 *foundation of the government. If the provisions of the constitution can be set aside by an act of congress,*  
3 *where is the course of usurpation to end? The present assault upon capital is but the beginning. It will be but*  
4 *the stepping-stone to others, larger and more sweeping, till our political contests will become a war of the*  
5 *poor against the rich,-a war constantly growing in intensity and bitterness. 'If the court sanctions the power*  
6 *of discriminating taxation, and nullifies the uniformity mandate of the constitution,' as said by one who has*  
7 *been all his life a student of our institutions, 'it will mark the hour when the sure decadence of our present*  
8 *government will commence.'* *If the purely arbitrary limitation of four thousand dollars in the present law can*  
9 *be sustained, none having less than that amount of income being assessed or taxed for the support of the*  
10 *government, the limitation of future congresses may be fixed at a much larger sum, at five or ten or twenty*  
11 *thousand dollars, parties possessing an income of that amount alone being bound to bear the burdens of*  
12 *government; or the limitation may be designated at such an amount as a board of 'walking delegates' may deem*  
13 *necessary. There is no safety in allowing the limitation to be adjusted except in strict compliance with the*  
14 *mandates of the constitution, which require its taxation, if imposed by direct taxes, to be apportioned among the*  
15 *states according to their representation, and, if imposed by indirect taxes, to be uniform in operation and, so far*  
16 *as practicable, in proportion to their property, equal upon all citizens. Unless the rule of the constitution*  
17 *governs, a majority may fix the limitation at such rate as will not include any of their own number."*  
18 *[Pollock v. Farmers Loan and Trust Co., 157 U.S. 429 (1895)]*

19 All that you prove with your flawed and dissonant advocacy is that you are on the WRONG side of this "war". Making  
20 slaves out of one's own children at gunpoint and making them a casualty of this "war" could hardly be termed "in the best  
21 interests of the child" in a family court. It's cannibalism, not parenting if it is enforced at gun point as the tax system is.  
22 The least any self-respecting and God-fearing parent can and should do is give their own children a CHOICE as to whether  
23 to support their parents in their old age. Instead, you propose to hand Uncle a loaded gun to perform a stick up on your  
24 own children and even pay for the gun with your tax withholding (criminal bribes to treat you like a public officer) and  
25 endorse the abuse of the gun as a jurist and voter. That's not being law abiding under either man's law or God's law.  
26 Instead, that's being a criminal under BOTH law systems. That is why Justice Antonin Scalia of the U.S. Supreme Court  
27 says that the law DESTROYS families:

SEDm Exhibit #03.005  
<http://sedm.org/Exhibits/ExhibitIndex.htm>

28 The only reason anything we say on this subject could truthfully be called "righteous" to begin with is because it is in  
29 conflict with our own self (fleshly) interest and in complete harmony with scripture. In fact, we couldn't truthfully be  
30 classified as a religious ministry if we spoke for ourselves instead of God. All legitimate religious ministries are  
31 fiduciaries, agents, trustees, and public officers of the Kingdom of Heaven, Inc. and of NO OTHER.

32 *"I can of Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because I do not seek My own*  
33 *will but the will of the Father who sent Me."*  
34 *[Jesus in John 5:30, Bible, NKJV]*

35 What we have consistently said and emphasized on our website and ministry publications about our desire to learn and  
36 promote the law needs to be qualified by defining what we mean by "law". Franchises are not "law" in a classical or  
37 common law sense, but merely contracts or agreements or what Roscoe Pound calls "compacts" that Christians cannot  
38 consent to (without committing MUTINY) and which therefore can NEVER acquire the "force of law" against a devout and  
39 OBEDIENT Christian:

40 *"You shall make no covenant [contract or franchise] with them [foreigners, pagans], nor with their [pagan*  
41 *government] gods [laws or judges]. They shall not dwell in your land [and you shall not dwell in theirs by*  
42 *becoming a "resident" or domiciliary in the process of contracting with them], lest they make you sin against*  
43 *Me [God]. For if you serve their [government] gods [under contract or agreement or franchise], it will surely*  
44 *be a snare to you."*  
45 *[Exodus 23:32-33, Bible, NKJV]*

46  
47 *"I [God] brought you up from Egypt [slavery] and brought you to the land of which I swore to your fathers;*  
48 *and I said, 'I will never break My covenant with you. And you shall make no covenant [contract or franchise*  
49 *or agreement of ANY kind] with the inhabitants of this [corrupt pagan] land; you shall tear down their*  
50 *[man/government worshipping socialist] altars.' But you have not obeyed Me. Why have you done this?"*

51 *"Therefore I also said, 'I will not drive them out before you; but they will become as thorns [terrorists and*  
52 *persecutors] in your side and their gods will be a snare [slavery!] to you.'"*

1                   *So it was, when the Angel of the LORD spoke these words to all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up*  
2                   *their voices and wept.*  
3                   *[Judges 2:1-4, Bible, NKJV]*

4       No amount of philosophizing or rationalizing can remove the fundamental cognitive dissonance, dichotomy, and therefore  
5       logical fallacy that you propose. It simply can't be the truth, because it conflicts with itself and with scripture. Love  
6       rejoices in TRUTH, not in self-gratification, trusting Caesar rather than God for "benefits", or "feeding the flesh".

7       Don't shoot the messenger. God is the source. If readers don't like what God has to say on the subject, then they must  
8       either admit they are disobedient or admit that He isn't God and that they are taking His place as god, just like Lucifer and  
9       the serpent. Anyone who puts their own desires above God's law is practicing idolatry and violating the Ten  
10      Commandments. The following pastor agrees with us on this subject:

Counterfeit Gods, Tim Keller  
<https://youtu.be/mK65lpveSM>

11      Any attempt to invalidate the Bible as a law book in our [Member Forums](#) is anarchy under God's law that gets members  
12      expelled, according to the forum rules.

13      The worse that could be said about what we propose is that it is idealistic and possibly even impractical. But "practicality"  
14      is synonymous with feeding the flesh and thereby placing man above god and practicing idolatry.

15      Logical fallacies like those you propose are the "fig leaf" that deceivers hide behind, just like Adam and Eve after they ate  
16      the fruit in the Garden of Eden. Government is famous for such fallacies. Such fallacies are the main mechanism that it  
17      expands and protects its power with, in fact. Now we have YET ANOTHER government public officer spreading them  
18      here in our [Member Forums](#). If your goal was to literally play "devil's advocate" in these forums, you're doing a good job  
19      by encouraging everyone to take the [franchise trap bait](#) and become government property and chattel in the process. [Drink](#)  
20      [that government Kool-Aid. SLURP! SLURP!](#) Would you expect anything less from someone who took the franchise bait  
21      hook line and sinker as a true public officer in the U.S. military?

22      With all due respect, Father forgive them, for they know not what they do, or refuse to admit the fallacy or hypocrisy or  
23      deceit of what they do.

## 24      **14 How to minimize violations of God's law as a socialist**

### 25      **14.1 Voting**

26      It has always been a crime to bribe voters. Socialist handouts are the bribes. Therefore, as a bare minimum, those who  
27      receive or intend to receive any socialist handout should abstain entirely from voting.

### 28      **14.2 Jury Duty**

29      It has always been a crime to tamper with jurors, and bribery is one form of tampering. Socialist handouts are the bribes.

30                   [18 U.S.C. § 201 - Bribery of public officials and witnesses](#)

31                   *(a) For the purpose of this section—*

32                   *(1) the term "public official" means Member of Congress, Delegate, or Resident Commissioner, either before*  
33                   *or after such official has qualified, or an officer or employee or person acting for or on behalf of the United*  
34                   *States, or any department, agency or branch of Government thereof, including the District of Columbia, in any*  
35                   *official function, under or by authority of any such department, agency, or branch of Government, **or a juror:***

36                   *[. . .]*

37                   *(b) Whoever—*

(1) directly or indirectly, corruptly gives, offers or promises anything of value to any public official or person who has been selected to be a public official, or offers or promises any public official or any person who has been selected to be a public official to give anything of value to any other person or entity, with intent—

(A) to influence any official act; or

(B) to influence such public official or person who has been selected to be a public official to commit or aid in committing, or collude in, or allow, any fraud, or make opportunity for the commission of any fraud, on the United States; or

(C) to induce such public official or such person who has been selected to be a public official to do or omit to do any act in violation of the lawful duty of such official or person;

(2) being a public official or person selected to be a public official, directly or indirectly, corruptly demands, seeks, receives, accepts, or agrees to receive or accept anything of value personally or for any other person or entity, in return for:

(A) being influenced in the performance of any official act;

(B) being influenced to commit or aid in committing, or to collude in, or allow, any fraud, or make opportunity for the commission of any fraud, on the United States; or

(C) being induced to do or omit to do any act in violation of the official duty of such official or person;

(3) directly or indirectly, corruptly gives, offers, or promises anything of value to any person, or offers or promises such person to give anything of value to any other person or entity, with intent to influence the testimony under oath or affirmation of such first-mentioned person as a witness upon a trial, hearing, or other proceeding, before any court, any committee of either House or both Houses of Congress, or any agency, commission, or officer authorized by the laws of the United States to hear evidence or take testimony, or with intent to influence such person to absent himself therefrom;

(4) directly or indirectly, corruptly demands, seeks, receives, accepts, or agrees to receive or accept anything of value personally or for any other person or entity in return for being influenced in testimony under oath or affirmation as a witness upon any such trial, hearing, or other proceeding, or in return for absenting himself therefrom;

shall be fined under this title or not more than three times the monetary equivalent of the thing of value, whichever is greater, or imprisoned for not more than fifteen years, or both, and may be disqualified from holding any office of honor, trust, or profit under the United States.

Consequently, those who are:

1. Statutory “taxpayers” and who would get angry at nontaxpayers for increasing their tax bill.
2. Either receiving or eligible to receive any government “benefit”.

. . . should not be serving as a juror, and especially in matters concerning the tax enforcement or criminal tax, because the benefits they receive are derived from said tax. Below is the ruling of one early court on this very matter:

*UNITED STATES v. GRIFFITH et al.*, 55 App.D.C. 123, 2 F.2d. 925 (1924)  
(Court of Appeals of District of Columbia.  
Submitted October 9, 1924.  
Decided December 1, 1924.)  
No. 4114.

*1. Grand jury —Employee to whom government is paying disability compensation held “employee” of government, disqualified as juror.*

*Government employee, to whom government is paying disability compensation under Act Sept. 7, 1916 (Comp. St. §§ S932a—S932uu), held “employee” of the government, within rule disqualifying such employees from acting as jurors.*

[Ed. Note.—For other definitions, see Words and Phrases, First and Second Series, Employé.]

*2. Grand jury—United States government employee not qualified to serve as member of grand jury in District of Columbia.*

An employee of United States is not qualified to serve as member of grand jury in District of Columbia, notwithstanding Code, §§ 215, 217.

3. Criminal law —Disqualification of grand juror may be raised by plea in abatement.

An accused may present objections to member of grand jury, who was disqualified as employee of United States government, by plea in abatement.

Appeal from Supreme Court of District of Columbia.

Ward W. Griffith and others were indicted for conspiracy. From a judgment sustaining a plea in abatement and quashing indictment, the United States appeals. Affirmed.

Peyton Gordon, of Washington, D. C., for appellant.

Leon Tobriner, B. U. Graham, and J. L. Smith, all of Washington, D. C., for appellees.

Before MARTIN, Chief Justice, ROBB, Associate Justice, and SMITH, Judge of the United States Court of Customs Appeals.

MARTIN, Chief Justice. In this case the United States appeals from a judgment of the Supreme Court of the District of Columbia, sustaining a plea in abatement and quashing an indictment, upon the ground that one of the members of the grand jury which returned the indictment was disqualified by law.

The indictment in question was returned on March 9, 1921. It charged the defendants therein, now the appellees, with a conspiracy in restraint of trade and commerce in coal in the District of Columbia. On May 16, 1921, the defendants filed a plea in abatement, alleging and contending that one George H. Van Kirk had served as a member of the grand jury in the finding of the indictment, whereas at that time he was a paid employee of the United States, and consequently was not competent or qualified to act as a grand juror in the case. The defendants averred that they had not learned of these facts until four days before the filing of the plea, and that they thereupon presented it as speedily as could be. The government filed a replication denying these allegations, and issue was joined, whereupon the court sustained the plea, quashed the indictment, and discharged the defendants. From that order the government has appealed.

It appears without dispute that for some years prior to July 28, 1920, the grand juror in question was a resident of the District of Columbia, and was employed at an annual salary as a stenographer, typist, and clerk in the War Department of the United States; that on the day named, because of disabilities, he filed with the United States Employees' Compensation Commission an application for disability compensation, under the act of Congress entitled "An act to provide compensation for employees of the United States suffering injuries while in the performance of their duties, and for other purposes," approved September 7, 1916 (39 Statutes at Large, 742, c. 458 [Comp. St. §§ 8932a - 8932uu]); that on October 22, 1920, the commission awarded him disability compensation at the rate of \$66.67 per month, being a rate based upon the salary which he was receiving at the time of his disability; and that he was carried at that rate upon the United States employees' disability rolls at and during the time of his service as grand juror in this case.

[1.] The act aforesaid provides that the United States shall pay compensation for the disability of an employee resulting from a personal injury sustained while in the performance of duty; that the amount thereof shall be adjusted by the commission according to the monthly pay of the employee; that the commission may, from time to time, require a partially disabled employee to report the wages he is then receiving, and if he refuses to seek suitable work, or refuses or neglects to work after suitable work is offered to him, he shall not be entitled to any compensation; that the commission may determine whether the wage-earning capacity of the disabled employee has decreased on account of old age, irrespective of the injury, and may reduce his disability compensation accordingly; and that at any time, upon its own motion or on an application the commission may review the award, and in accordance with the facts found by it, may end, diminish, or increase the compensation previously awarded.

It thus appears that at the time in question the government was paying the juror a monthly stipend as employee's compensation, reserving the authority to control his conduct in certain particulars, and with power to increase, diminish, or terminate the compensation at discretion. In our opinion that relationship, whatever be the technical name which may most narrowly describe it, did in effect constitute the juror an employee of the United States within the sense in which that term is here used.

[2] The next question is whether an employee of the government is disqualified under the law to serve as a juror in the District of Columbia. The following sections of the District Code relate to this question, to wit:

"Sec. 215. Qualifications. - No person shall be competent to act as a juror unless he be a citizen of the United States, a resident of the District of Columbia, over twenty-one and under sixty-five years of age, able to read



and write and to understand the English language, and a good and lawful man, who has never been convicted of a felony or a misdemeanor involving moral turpitude.”

“Sec. 217. All executive and judicial officers, salaried officers of the government of the United States and of the District of Columbia and those connected with the police or fire departments, counselors and attorneys at law in actual practice, ministers of the gospel and clergymen of every denomination, practicing physicians and surgeons, keepers of hospitals, asylums, alms-houses, or other charitable institutions created by or under the laws relating to the District, captains and masters and other persons employed on vessels navigating the waters of the District shall be exempt from jury duty, and their names shall not be placed on the jury lists.”

In *Crawford v. United States*, 212 U.S. 183, 195, 29 S.Ct. 260, 267 (53 L.Ed. 465, 15 Ann.Cas. 392) an accused had been convicted of a crime in the District of Columbia by a petit jury one member of which was at the time a United States postal employee. The accused had challenged the juror for that cause, but the challenge was overruled upon the ground that sections 215 and 217, *supra*, did not include such relationship within the list of disqualifications. The Supreme Court however held that under the common law of the District independently of those enactments, “one is not a competent juror on a case if he is master, servant, steward, counsellor or attorney of either party.” Accordingly the conviction was reversed. The following extract is taken from the opinion in that case, written by Mr. Justice Peckham:

“We do not think that section 215 of the Code of the District includes the whole subject of the qualifications of jurors in that District. If that section, together with section 217, were alone to be considered, it might be that the juror was qualified. But, by the common law, a further qualification exists. If that law remains in force in this regard in this District a different decision is called for from that made in this case. The common law in force in Maryland, February 27, 1801, remains in force here, except as the same may be inconsistent with or replaced by some provision of the Code for the District, Code, § 1, c. 1, p. 5. It has not been contended that the common law upon the subject of jurors was not in force in Maryland at the above-named date, or that it did not remain in force here, at least up to the time of the passage of the Code. Jurors must at least have the qualifications mentioned in section 215, but that section does not, in our opinion, so far alter the common law upon the subject as to exclude its rule that one is not a competent juror in a case if he is master, servant, steward, counsellor or attorney of either party. In such case a juror may be challenged for principal cause as an absolute disqualification of the juror. 3 Blackstone (Cooley’s 4th Ed.) p. 363; *Block v. State*, 100 Indiana, 357, 362. \* \* \* This rule applies as well to criminal as to civil cases.”

**The foregoing decision is authority for the conclusion that a United States employee is not qualified to serve as a member of the petit jury in the trial of a criminal case in the District of Columbia, and that a challenge seasonably made by the accused upon that ground should be sustained. See also, *Miller v. United States*, 38 App. D.C. 36.**

[3] The question next arises whether such an employee is likewise disqualified from serving as a grand juror in the District, and whether an accused may present his objections to such a juror by a plea in abatement. In answer to this we may say that in general the term “juror” is held to include alike both petit and grand jurors, and that objections to the qualifications of grand jurors, under circumstances such as these may be made by a plea in abatement. *Spencer v. United States*, 169 F. 562 565, 95 C. C. A. 60; *Williams v. United States* (C. C. A.), 275 F. 129, 131; *Clawson v. United States*, 114 U.S. 477, 483, 5 S.Ct. 919, 29 L.Ed. 179; *Agnew v. United States*, 165 U.S. 35, 44, 17 S.Ct. 235, 41 L.Ed. 624; *Crowley v. United States*, 194 U.S. 461, 24 S.Ct. 731, 48 L.Ed. 1075.

In *Clawson v. United States*, *supra*, a case arising in the then territory of Utah, the Supreme Court considered section 5 of the Act of Congress of March 22, 1882, 22 Stat. 30 (Comp. St. § 1265), which provides “that in any prosecution for bigamy, polygamy, or unlawful cohabitation, under any statute of the United States, it shall be sufficient cause of challenge to any person drawn or summoned as a juryman or talesman, \* \* \* that he believes it right for a man to have more than one living and undivorced wife at the same time.” It was held that the terms “juryman or talesman” included both grand and petit jurors. The following extract is taken from the opinion by Mr. Justice Blatchford in that case:

“It is also urged that § 5 does not apply to grand jurors. The language is, ‘any person drawn or summoned as a juryman or talesman’—‘any person appearing or offered as a juror or talesman.’ In view of the fact that by section 4 of the Act of June 23, 1874, both grand jurors and petit jurors are to be drawn from the box containing the two hundred names, and are to be summoned under venires, and are to constitute the regular grand and petit juries for the term, and of the further fact that the persons to be challenged and excluded are persons not likely to find indictments for the offenses named in section 5, we cannot doubt that the words ‘juryman’ and ‘juror’ include a grand juror as well as a petit juror. There is as much ground for holding that it includes the former alone, as the latter alone, if it is to include but one. It must, include one at least, and we think it includes both. The purpose and reason of the section include the grand juror; and there is nothing in the language repugnant to such view. The use of the words ‘drawn or summoned as a juryman or talesman,’ and of the words ‘appearing or offered as a juror or talesman,’ does not have the effect of confining the meaning of ‘juror’ to ‘petit juror,’ on the view that the ordinary meaning of ‘talesman’ refers to a petit juror. A grand juror is a juryman and a juror, and is drawn and summoned, and it might well have been thought wisest to mention a ‘tales-man’ specifically, lest the words ‘juryman’ and ‘juror’ might be supposed not to include him.”

It may be noted that sections 198, 199, 203, 204, 215, 216, and 217 of the District Code, providing for the drawing and selection of “jurors” all apply alike to grand and petit jurors. In *Crowley v. United States*, *supra*, it was held by the Supreme Court that an objection by plea in abatement, before the arraignment of the accused, to an indictment on the ground that some of the grand jurors were disqualified by law, was in due time, and was made in a proper way, and also that the disqualification of a grand juror prescribed by statute is a matter of substance, which cannot be regarded as a mere defect or imperfection, within the meaning of section 1025, Rev. Stat. (Comp. St. § 1691). The latter statement likewise applies to a disqualification like this under the common law.

In our opinion, therefore, the trial court rightly sustained the plea in abatement, and its judgment is affirmed.

## **15 What those who have chosen socialism and government slavery can and cannot use on our website**

Those who are participating in Social Security, Medicare, Unemployment insurance or who have or use a Social Security Number are not welcome to use any of our materials or services in disputing a tax liability.

Those who voluntarily applied for a driver license and did not rescind it may not use our right to travel materials to dispute their liability under the vehicle code franchise.

## **16 God promises to curse those who disobey His law as documented herein**

The book of Deuteronomy in Chapter 28 describes the fate of all those how disobey God’s law as documented herein. We repeat God’s curses to all those who willfully disobey His holy laws and thereby choose or consent in any way to or “benefit” from socialism:

### **Curses on Disobedience**

<sup>15</sup> “But it shall come to pass, if you do not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all His commandments and His statutes which I command you today, that all these curses will come upon you and overtake you:

<sup>16</sup> “Cursed shall you be in the city, and cursed shall you be in the country.

<sup>17</sup> “Cursed shall be your basket and your kneading bowl.

<sup>18</sup> “Cursed shall be the fruit of your body and the produce of your land, the increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks.

<sup>19</sup> “Cursed shall you be when you come in, and cursed shall you be when you go out.

<sup>20</sup> “The LORD will send on you cursing, confusion, and rebuke in all that you set your hand to do, until you are destroyed and until you perish quickly, because of the wickedness of your doings in which you have forsaken Me. <sup>21</sup> The LORD will make the plague cling to you until He has consumed you from the land which you are going to possess. <sup>22</sup> The LORD will strike you with consumption, with fever, with inflammation, with severe burning fever, with the sword, with scorching,<sup>[c]</sup> and with mildew; they shall pursue you until you perish. <sup>23</sup> And your heavens which are over your head shall be bronze, and the earth which is under you shall be iron. <sup>24</sup> The LORD will change the rain of your land to powder and dust; from the heaven it shall come down on you until you are destroyed.

<sup>25</sup> “The LORD will cause you to be defeated before your enemies; you shall go out one way against them and flee seven ways before them; and you shall become troublesome to all the kingdoms of the earth. <sup>26</sup> Your carcasses shall be food for all the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, and no one shall frighten them away. <sup>27</sup> The LORD will strike you with the boils of Egypt, with tumors, with the scab, and with the itch, from which you cannot be healed. <sup>28</sup> The LORD will strike you with madness and blindness and confusion of heart. <sup>29</sup> And you shall grope at noonday, as a blind man gropes in darkness; you shall not prosper in your ways; you shall be only oppressed and plundered continually, and no one shall save you.

<sup>30</sup> “You shall betroth a wife, but another man shall lie with her; you shall build a house, but you shall not dwell in it; you shall plant a vineyard, but shall not gather its grapes. <sup>31</sup> Your ox shall be slaughtered before your eyes, but you shall not eat of it; your donkey shall be violently taken away from before you, and shall not be restored to you; your sheep shall be given to your enemies, and you shall have no one to rescue them. <sup>32</sup> Your sons and your daughters shall be given to another people, and your eyes shall look and fail with longing for them all day

1 long; and there shall be <sup>33</sup>no strength in your hand. <sup>33</sup> A nation whom you have not known shall eat the fruit of  
2 your land and the produce of your labor, and you shall be only oppressed and crushed continually. <sup>34</sup> So you  
3 shall be driven mad because of the sight which your eyes see. <sup>35</sup> The LORD will strike you in the knees and on the  
4 legs with severe boils which cannot be healed, and from the sole of your foot to the top of your head.

5 <sup>36</sup> “The LORD will bring you and the king whom you set over you to a nation which neither you nor your fathers  
6 have known, and there you shall serve other gods—wood and stone. <sup>37</sup> And you shall become an <sup>37</sup>astonishment,  
7 a proverb, and a byword among all nations where the LORD will drive you.

8 <sup>38</sup> “You shall carry much seed out to the field but gather little in, for the locust shall consume it. <sup>39</sup> You shall  
9 plant vineyards and tend them, but you shall neither drink of the wine nor gather the grapes; for the worms  
10 shall eat them. <sup>40</sup> You shall have olive trees throughout all your territory, but you shall not anoint yourself with  
11 the oil; for your olives shall drop off. <sup>41</sup> You shall beget sons and daughters, but they shall not be yours; for they  
12 shall go into captivity. <sup>42</sup> Locusts shall consume all your trees and the produce of your land.

13 <sup>43</sup> “The alien who is among you shall rise higher and higher above you, and you shall come down lower and  
14 lower. <sup>44</sup> He shall lend to you, but you shall not lend to him; he shall be the head, and you shall be the tail.

15 <sup>45</sup> “Moreover all these curses shall come upon you and pursue and overtake you, until you are destroyed,  
16 because you did not obey the voice of the LORD your God, to keep His commandments and His statutes which  
17 He commanded you. <sup>46</sup> And they shall be upon you for a sign and a wonder, and on your descendants forever.

18 <sup>47</sup> “Because you did not serve the LORD your God with joy and gladness of heart, for the abundance of  
19 everything, <sup>48</sup> therefore you shall serve your enemies, whom the LORD will send against you, in hunger, in thirst,  
20 in nakedness, and in need of everything; and He will put a yoke of iron on your neck until He has destroyed you.  
21 <sup>49</sup> The LORD will bring a nation against you from afar, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flies, a  
22 nation whose language you will not understand, <sup>50</sup> a nation of fierce countenance, which does not respect the  
23 elderly nor show favor to the young. <sup>51</sup> And they shall eat the increase of your livestock and the produce of your  
24 land, until you are destroyed; they shall not leave you grain or new wine or oil, or the increase of your cattle or  
25 the offspring of your flocks, until they have destroyed you.

26 <sup>52</sup> “They shall besiege you at all your gates until your high and fortified walls, in which you trust, come down  
27 throughout all your land; and they shall besiege you at all your gates throughout all your land which the LORD  
28 your God has given you. <sup>53</sup> You shall eat the fruit of your own body, the flesh of your sons and your daughters  
29 whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and desperate straits in which your enemy shall distress  
30 you. <sup>54</sup> The <sup>54</sup>sensitive and very refined man among you will be hostile toward his brother, toward the wife of his  
31 bosom, and toward the rest of his children whom he leaves behind, <sup>55</sup> so that he will not give any of them the  
32 flesh of his children whom he will eat, because he has nothing left in the siege and desperate straits in which  
33 your enemy shall distress you at all your gates. <sup>56</sup> The tender and delicate woman among you, who would not  
34 venture to set the sole of her foot on the ground because of her delicateness and sensitivity, will refuse to the  
35 husband of her bosom, and to her son and her daughter, <sup>57</sup> her placenta which comes out from between her feet  
36 and her children whom she bears; for she will eat them secretly for lack of everything in the siege and desperate  
37 straits in which your enemy shall distress you at all your gates.

38 <sup>58</sup> “If you do not carefully observe all the words of this law that are written in this book, that you may fear this  
39 glorious and awesome name, THE LORD YOUR GOD, <sup>59</sup> then the LORD will bring upon you and your  
40 descendants extraordinary plagues—great and prolonged plagues—and serious and prolonged sicknesses. <sup>60</sup>  
41 Moreover He will bring back on you all the diseases of Egypt, of which you were afraid, and they shall cling to  
42 you. <sup>61</sup> Also every sickness and every plague, which is not written in this Book of the Law, will the LORD bring  
43 upon you until you are destroyed. <sup>62</sup> You shall be left few in number, whereas you were as the stars of heaven in  
44 multitude, because you would not obey the voice of the LORD your God. <sup>63</sup> And it shall be, that just as the LORD  
45 rejoiced over you to do you good and multiply you, so the LORD will rejoice over you to destroy you and bring  
46 you to nothing; and you shall be plucked from off the land which you go to possess.

47 <sup>64</sup> “Then the LORD will scatter you among all peoples, from one end of the earth to the other, and there you shall  
48 serve other gods, which neither you nor your fathers have known—wood and stone. <sup>65</sup> And among those nations  
49 you shall find no rest, nor shall the sole of your foot have a resting place; but there the LORD will give you a  
50 <sup>65</sup>trembling heart, failing eyes, and anguish of soul. <sup>66</sup> Your life shall hang in doubt before you; you shall fear  
51 day and night, and have no assurance of life. <sup>67</sup> In the morning you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were evening!’ And at  
52 evening you shall say, ‘Oh, that it were morning!’ because of the fear which terrifies your heart, and because of  
53 the sight which your eyes see.

54 <sup>68</sup> “And the LORD will take you back to Egypt in ships, by the way of which I said to you, ‘You shall never see it  
55 again.’ And there you shall be offered for sale to your enemies as male and female slaves, but no one will buy  
56 you.”  
57 [Deut. 28:15-68, Bible, NKJV]

1 Those Christians who would argue that the above curses do not apply or have been repealed by the New Testament are no  
2 only wrong, but count as “lawless” and in the same category as the Pharisees according to Jesus. We prove this in:

Laws of the Bible, Form #13.001, Section 2  
<https://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

3 On the other side, God promises huge blessings to all those who obey in Deut. 28:1-14.

4 **Blessings on Obedience**

5 *28 “Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the LORD your God, to observe carefully all*  
6 *His commandments which I command you today, that the LORD your God will set you high above all nations of*  
7 *the earth. <sup>2</sup> And all these blessings shall come upon you and overtake you, because you obey the voice of the*  
8 *LORD your God:*

9 *<sup>3</sup> “Blessed shall you be in the city, and blessed shall you be in the country.*

10 *<sup>4</sup> “Blessed shall be the fruit of your body, the produce of your ground and the increase of your herds, the*  
11 *increase of your cattle and the offspring of your flocks.*

12 *<sup>5</sup> “Blessed shall be your basket and your kneading bowl.*

13 *<sup>6</sup> “Blessed shall you be when you come in, and blessed shall you be when you go out.*

14 *<sup>7</sup> “The LORD will cause your enemies who rise against you to be defeated before your face; they shall come out*  
15 *against you one way and flee before you seven ways.*

16 *<sup>8</sup> “The LORD will command the blessing on you in your storehouses and in all to which you set your hand, and*  
17 *He will bless you in the land which the LORD your God is giving you.*

18 *<sup>9</sup> “The LORD will establish you as a holy people to Himself, just as He has sworn to you, if you keep the*  
19 *commandments of the LORD your God and walk in His ways. <sup>10</sup> Then all peoples of the earth shall see that you*  
20 *are called by the name of the LORD, and they shall be afraid of you. <sup>11</sup> And the LORD will grant you plenty of*  
21 *goods, in the fruit of your body, in the increase of your livestock, and in the produce of your ground, in the land*  
22 *of which the LORD swore to your fathers to give you. <sup>12</sup> The LORD will open to you His good treasure, the*  
23 *heavens, to give the rain to your land in its season, and to bless all the work of your hand. You shall lend to*  
24 *many nations, but you shall not borrow. <sup>13</sup> And the LORD will make you the head and not the tail; you shall be*  
25 *above only, and not be beneath, if you heed the commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you*  
26 *today, and are careful to observe them. <sup>14</sup> So you shall not turn aside from any of the words which I command*  
27 *you this day, to the right or the left, to go after other gods to serve them.*  
28 *[Deut. 28:1-14, Bible, NKJV]*

29 **17 Resources for Further Study and Rebuttal**

30 If you would like to study the subjects covered in this short pamphlet in further detail, may we recommend the following  
31 authoritative sources, and also welcome you to rebut any part of this pamphlet after you have read it and studied the subject  
32 carefully yourself just as we have:

- 33 1. *Socialism: The New American Civil Religion*, Form #05.016  
34 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
35 2. *Social Security: Mark of the Beast*, Form #11.407  
36 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
37 3. *Why You Aren't Eligible for Social Security*, Form #06.001  
38 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
39 4. *Resignation of Compelled Social Security Trustee*, Form #06.002  
40 <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>